Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/bwb_Y0-EJN-546

GOVERNORS ISLAND

ITS MILITARY HISTORY UNDER THREE FLAGS

1637-1922

BY

EDMUND BANKS SMITH

CHAPLAIN O R C GOVERNORS ISLAND, NEW YORK HARBOUR

NEW YORK

VALENTINE'S MANUAL INC.

1923

COPYRIGHTED
1913 - 1922
BY THE
REVEREND EDMUND BANKS SMITH

Reprinted by:

HIGGINSON BOOK COMPANY, LLC
10 Colonial Road, Suite 5
PO Box 778
Salem, MA 01970
Phone: (978) 745-7170 *Fax*: (978) 745-8025

www.HigginsonBooks.com

For a complete list of our local history and genealogy books,
please call, write or visit our web site.

This book has been printed on acid-free paper;
hardcover bindings are Class-A archival quality.

Captain in the Royal American Regiment 60th Foot

Governors Island

1756

THIS BOOK IS DEDICATED WITH THE REGARDS OF THE AUTHOR

TO

MAJOR-GENERAL ROBERT LEE BULLARD

UNITED STATES ARMY

COMMANDING GENERAL, 2nd CORPS AREA

DISTINGUISHED IN THE WORLD WAR AS COMMANDER FIRST OF THE 2ND ARMY
THEN OF THE 3RD CORPS AND LAST OF THE 1ST DIVISION

HE WENT TO THE SEAT OF WAR WITH THE FIRST CONTINGENT OF
AMERICAN TROOPS AND REMAINED IN ACTIVE OPERATION
AGAINST THE ENEMY FROM THAT TIME UNTIL
THE CLOSE OF HOSTILITIES

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Chapter I. Indian and Dutch Period..... to 1674
Pages 7-26

Chapter II. English Colonial and Revolutionary Period 1674-1783
Pages 27-76

Chapter III. Period of the War of 1812.....1812-1815
Pages 77-100

Chapter IV. Mexican and Civil War Period...1846-1865
Pages 101-110

Chapter V. Garrison Notes.....1865-1913
Pages 111-156

Chapter VI. Ferry Transportation in Four Centuries 1637-1913
Pages 157-166

Chapter VII. The New York Arsenal.....1831-1913
Pages 167-172

Chapter VIII. Religious Work and Influence.
Pages 173-202

Chapter IX. Governors Island Extension.
Pages 203-208

Chapter X. Regiments—Colonial, Revolutionary and American 1755-1913
Pages 209-226

Chapter XI. Royal American Regiment—60th Foot.
Pages 227-240

Epilogue
Pages 241-244

PREFACE

IT SEEMS to be a beneficent arrangement of Nature that all great harbours are provided with small islands. These serve highly important purposes as breakwaters or stations for various official uses, and especially for Army and Navy purposes as ship yards and bases for defensive works and military supplies.

Thus the harbour of Rio de Janeiro has Lage with its forts—Cobras, Santa Barbara and others; Naples, its Ischia and Capri; San Francisco has Angel Island and Alcatraz; St. Petersburg, Basil and Petropski Islands; Montreal, St. Helen's and Ile Ronde; Manila has Corregidor, our Eastern Gibraltar; and Panama in the South, Naos, Perico and Flamenco. New York Harbour is well provided with these friendly aids to good National housekeeping, which, beginning with the lighthouse islands in the lower bay, and including the mighty Richmond with its quarantine attendants, sweep in graceful lines through the curving East River to where it debouches into the open Sound. Among these sentries which stand on guard wherever an open door invites attack is one, the fairest of them all, the "Smiling Garden of the Sovereigns of the Province," as the old Colonial Governors used to call it, which in its long career has done more smiling than frowning, the subject of this History, Governors Island.

"Pagganck" in Indian days, "Nutten" in Colonial Dutch and "Governors" in English and American occupation—by every name it has been fair and sweet, and it deserves as well of the future as it has served well the past.

Governors Island has stood in four centuries for that which is best in our National life. It has represented authority and defense. The Dutch and English before us regarded it as a

source of influence and power. Its nearness to the Metropolis gives it convenience; its isolation bestows dignity and security. In addition to its value and importance in time of peace for the preservation of civic interests and in war for defense as a centre of administration, a depot for supplies and a receiving and training station, a value may be mentioned which as a principle ranks above the definite purposes already mentioned. Historical continuity and veneration for persons and places of dignity are not valued as they should be by the American of today. It is needless to say how important these considerations are for the higher development of our National life. The writer does not know of any one place in America where opportunities for developing these characteristics of a high National life cluster as they do at Governors Island.

Here, for two hundred and eighty-five years, since Van Twiller and the Indians signed their Roman-Dutch agreement, authority has held the keys; here, for one hundred and sixty-six years, since the Royal Americans mounted guard in 1756, the tramp of sentries has never ceased; here, since 1783, our flag has welcomed and dismissed the sun each day at reveillé and retreat; here, gallant officers and fair ladies have lived and served and by their simple devotion to God and country have taught to others that great silent lesson of patriotism which is the alphabet of the Army; here, have been received with dignified respect the representatives of the Powers of every land, who have returned to their homes with a better opinion of America because in seeing our greatest Port they have seen also Governors Island with all it represents. Truly, this island has served well the State. As a picture of our Past, as a living reality in our Present, for the development of our Future, it must be preserved and endowed with greater power and activity.

The thought is not mere sentiment. It is practical patriotism. Our people need the object lesson which this military Station in New York can furnish. Washington has its Capitol, a picture in stone and iron for the Nation. New York has its civic and mercantile buildings to inspire municipal pride and to encourage financial enterprise. Governors Island is the one point in our vast City on which to centre a common patriotism. If this book has any suggestion in its story of Governors Island, it is of the importance of preserving inviolate this spot of National and Municipal interest, which through its long and honoured career has touched so many points in the history of the American Army and of the City of New York, and which today is a reminder to millions, as it watches o'er the Town, that the eternal vigilance of the Army is of fullest value to the State when every citizen is a patriot. *Semper floreat.*

It has been found impossible to give the data in full of every organization and individual stationed here. The records available are incomplete, and if they were not so, to transcribe them in full would encumber these pages with a mass of details and not carry out the idea of the writer, which is to present a simple picture of our Island in four centuries from a military point of view, with such touches of social life as can be gathered from various sources.

The author desires to express his thanks to a number of friends for aid in writing this History, especially to Brigadier-General George Andrews, The Adjutant-General of the Army, and to Colonel Herbert J. Slocum for valuable assistance, and to Captain Arthur F. Halpin for his kindness in preparing the illustrations.

GOVERNORS ISLAND, New York Harbour. October, 1922.

AUTHORITIES CONSULTED

(The spelling and capitalization in original papers, orders and reports are retained.)*

Reference is made in the following pages to the authorities mentioned, with the acknowledgments of the author:

Manual of the Corporation of the City of New York.

Manual of the Common Council of the City of New York.

Memorial History of the City of New York by Gen'l James Grant Wilson.

History of Trinity Parish in the City of New York by the Rev'd Morgan Dix, D.D., Rector of Trinity Church.

The Story of the Chapel of St. Cornelius the Centurion, Governor's Island, by Dr. Dix.

Historic New York, Half Moon Series, by Blanche W. Bellamy.

Tompkins Military Papers, by Daniel D. Tompkins, Governor of New York 1807-1817.

Journal—Legislative Council of the Colony of New York.

Colonial History of the State of New York. Brodhead.

Medical History of Governor's Island, by Charles Page, Surgeon, U.S.A., F. W. Elbrey, Asst.

Original General and Special Garrison Order Book, 1814-15.

Colden Papers. Lt.-Governor Colden.

Clinton Papers. Governor Clinton.

Adjutant General's Department Compilation.

Circular No. 8—Surgeon Genl's Office.

---

*The profuse use of capital letters in the time of Washington, as exhibited in some of the Revolutionary Orders quoted in this History, may be defended on the ground of good usage at the period. Benjamin Franklin, as late as 1789, laments the new use coming then into vogue of the non-capitalization of the initial letters of all nouns.

MSS. Minutes of Common Council subsequent to 1786, in Library of City Hall, New York.
New York City in the War of 1812. Guernsey.
Annals of the King's Royal Rifles—Colonel Lewis Butler, King's Royal Rifles, 60th Foot, British Army.
Memorial History of Staten Island. Colonel Ira K. Morris.
Historical and Statistical Record of the University of the State of New York. F. B. Hough.
New York Historical Society Publications.
Lee Papers.
Kemble's Journal. Lt.-Col. Stephen Kemble, Royal American Regt.
New Amsterdam and its People. J. H. Innes.
Valentine's Manual.
Lamb's History of Old New York.
Historical Register U. S. Army. F. B. Heitman.
Army List—British Forces, 1756, &c. (Official.)
Old New York by Henry Collins Brown.
The Kelby Notes.

The Author is indebted to the New York Historical Society, through the Librarian Mr. Wall, for permission to use the Kelby mss. notes, hitherto unpublished. Mr. William Kelby, the late distinguished librarian of the N. Y. Historical Society, made a special study of the history of the Islands in New York Harbour and collected many interesting facts, unknown to others. Quotations in this book from his notes are marked *K. N.*

CHAPTER I.

Governors Island
In the Indian and Dutch Period

Of the occupation of Governors Island by the Indians little is known except that they were here when the Dutch arrived and that they undoubtedly enjoyed its quiet retreats as succeeding generations of Dutch, English and American residents have done. That they were ready to part with it for what they deemed a fair consideration is evident from the deed of sale, as recorded, to Governor Wouter Van Twiller in 1637, and when we reflect that the Indians of Manahatas parted with their Island to Minuit, Governor and Director-General of New Netherland, for sixty guilders (twenty-four dollars), we must conclude that they made a shrewd bargain with Van Twiller for Governors Island. The Indian name for the Island was "Pagganck," referring to the groves of hickory, oak and chestnut trees with which it was well covered.

The Dutch rendered this name by "Nutten," and it was so called till the late Dutch and even the early English Colonial period, the term "Nutten," lingering in some cases into the Revolutionary times, although the nut trees that gave it that name had doubtless disappeared under the influence of the famous saw mill of which mention is frequently made in early times. The name of the Island was officially changed from "Nutten" to "Governors" by Act of Legislature, March 29, 1784.

That the Dutch had really a right to hold New York is denied by Dr. Dix in his History of Trinity Church (Vol. 1, p. 21), in which he points out that "the Dutch had no right by virtue of discovery, for the River and the Bay had been

well known since Verrazano's voyage in 1524. They had no rights by virtue of Charter: three years before the voyage of Hudson * * * the region had been doubly covered by patents issued by King James to the North and South Virginia Companies, a royal donation based on the claim of England to the North American Mainland acquired by John Cabot in 1497.

"The whole country was 'preempted,' as the Dutch very well knew, both by priority of discovery and formal occupation. Even if the Dutch had possessed a good title, a glance at the map will show that the position could not have been permanently maintained between the English settlements on the North and Virginia on the South: it was merely a question of time before inexorable laws must take their course."

Woodrow Wilson in his "History of the American People" seems to hold an opposite view, regarding the claim of right as a pretext, but he acknowledges that under Colonel Nicolls, "no less a statesman than a soldier, New Netherland was within a year transformed into New York under laws which promised toleration and good government and which all sensible men accepted with satisfaction."

The Dutch occupation of what is now New York, nevertheless, conferred a lasting benefit upon the community in the importation of sturdy traits of character which are appreciable in some of its most distinguished families today. Architectural remains are naturally non-existent, except in the style of some modern adaptations, but the names of streets and localities, such as Spuyten Duyvil, Corlaers Hook, Coenties Slip, Dutch and Van Dam Streets, Stuyvesant Square and St. Mark's-in-the-Bouwerie, where Petrus Stuyvesant lies buried, and many other names of like character, remind us of those days when the foundations of our present greatness were laid.

The foundation of the settlement may be dated from 1621, when the States-General of Holland gave the West India Company its Charter. In 1623 the "New Netherlands," a stout Dutch sailing vessel, Cornelius Jacobs of Hoorn, Skipper, with thirty families, came to this western Land of Promise. So seaworthy was this good ship that she continued in active service for more than thirty years after this and brought doubtless a large proportion of the early Dutch settlers to this land. In 1625 two more ships sailed from Holland laden with agricultural implements, seeds for planting, 103 head of cattle, household furniture and 200 settlers. Upon arrival in the harbour the cattle were landed on what is now Governors Island.

The West India Company was incorporated June 3, 1621, through the efforts of William Usselinx to colonize the lands discovered by Hudson. In addition to the expectation of revenue to be derived from the Colony was the idea of establishing a naval base for Dutch vessels in the war with Spain.

> "In 1621, the year of its establishment, the Company obtained a grant or patent from the States Generall for the setting and Planting a Colony here and was called the New Netherlands and made one of its first settlements near the mouth of Hudson's River upon an Island called Nutten Island."
>
> *From Colonial Documents—London.*

The first permanent Colony upon Manhattan Island was made by Peter Minuit in 1626 and the first act of settlement was to acquire land from the owners. Governor Peter Minuit made a bargain with the Indians as already mentioned, establishing thus early in what was to be the financial centre of the world a basis of real estate valuation.

The prudent Van Twiller followed the precedent set by Minuit with careful attention to comparative values and so in 1637 our Island passed forever from the control of the original Race, the hut was abandoned, the tent was folded and stowed in the canoe, the stealthy tread of the moccasin gave place to the heavy tramp of the wooden shoe, "Pagganck" became "Nutten" and a momentous page was opened in the history of the subject of this memorial as tribal existence yielded to National life. The flag of Holland is the first to proclaim a National occupation, to be succeeded as time goes on by that of England and then by that of England's daughter, grown too big and free for Georgian leading strings.

It is not the purpose of the author to point a moral to adorn this tale. The great fact stands out in considering the story of this spot, as in larger issues, that National life depends upon its standard of just dealings for continued existence. This is why the great Roman Empire fell and why little Switzerland endures. We may add many stars to the canton of our flag, but they must be kept undimmed, for even a just cause needs strong battalions.

The author trusts this simple tale of our Island will be of interest to many and that the record of the illustrious Past will inspire to even greater successes in the future. Before going on to review events under the flags of Holland, England and our own country, let us give a thought to those early inhabitants who had no flag save the waving branch on the trees which gave the name of Pagganck in the days before American history began.

The Indians who inhabited Pagganck Island and the Island of Manhattan (named from them) were of the Manhattan tribe, belonging to the Wappinger Confederacy. Geographically and linguistically they were intermediate between

the Delawares to the south and the Mohegans who lived in other parts of New York State.

Their principal village was Nappeckamack (now Yonkers). Their fort was Nipinicksen on Spuyten Duyvil Creek. From this point they sailed out to attack Hudson on his return voyage down the River that now bears his name—a quarter of a century before their sale of Pagganck (Nutten, Governors) Island to Wouter Van Twiller.

The illustration (p. 14) is from a rare engraving, an "ancient engraving, executed in Holland," as its title sets forth. It shows Fort Amsterdam erected in 1623 but finished as depicted in the engraving in 1635 by Governor Wouter Van Twiller, first Lord of Governors Island. This engraving is believed to be the only portrayal of the Island under the Indian occupation as indicated by the tents and huts upon its shores and the fleet of canoes plying between their Pagganck Island and the mainland.*

The deed of sale to Van Twiller extracted from the ancient records of the Manual of the Corporation of the City of New York is given in full, as befits its importance in an historical account of this Island and also for its interest as a document of the period.

We can imagine the effect upon Cakapeteyno and Pehiwas, the agents of their tribe in the sale to the Governor, of the sonorous phrases of the Roman-Dutch law and of the impres-

* This engraving has been the subject of considerable discussion. As it appears (p. 14) Fort Amsterdam is on the East side of Manhattan Island, whereas it should be upon the West. J. H. Innes holds that the reversal is due to the fact that the original view was taken from the Long Island shore by means of a plain camera obscura and that the proper orientation was not restored when the engraving was made in Holland. The reader who desires to correct the error has only to hold the picture before a mirror, when he will, upon reflection, perceive that he has the proper view.

sive circumstances with which the ceremony was doubtless invested. Whether the pipe of peace was passed around or not we are not informed, but doubtless these original proprietors were well content with the "certain parcels of goods" which they acknowledged "to their full and grateful satisfaction to have received into their hands and power," and in such simple form of transportation as the ancient engraving portrays they doubtless glided away to fish in other waters and enjoy their parcels of goods on other shores.*

Colonel Ira K. Morris in his "Memorial History of Staten Island" says that wampum at this period was estimated as follows: "With the Dutch Governors six beads of the white or four of the purple were equal in value to one penny." This currency was used by Europeans for many years after their settlement here. Both the Dutch and English recognized it as currency for a long time. In 1683 the schoolmaster at Flatbush was paid his salary in wheat "at wampum value." In 1693 the ferriage for passage from New York to Brooklyn was "eight stuyvers each in wampum."

Colonel Morris points out the advantage the Governors Island Indians had over those of Staten Island in making a sale of their land to the Dutch in that "on the adjoining Island (Staaten Eylandt) the Indians lived a most miserable life from the time of the arrival of the Dutch. War and bloodshed followed almost constantly. At times the whites were murdered or driven away. At others, the Indians perished. The Indians gradually decreased in number and power, and their dust to the very last mingled with the earth where their feet had trod. The last of the Raritans (or Aquehongas) on Staten Island passed away about 1826."

It is a cause for gratification that our Island began its official career in 1637 by honourable purchase from its owners.

*v. page 17.

During its documentary history of two hundred and eighty-four years not a single transaction can be found of a questionable character.* Under the three flags of Holland, England and America, as well as under the curling smoke of the wigwam, honour and justice have been the keynote of its existence and the glory of its history.

---

* The alleged diversion of funds by Lord Cornbury in 1702 must be mentioned as an unfortunate exception to this statement.

FROM JOOST HARTGER'S

BESCHRIJVINGHE VAN VIRGINIA

AMSTERDAM 1651

ORIGINAL DEED

OF

GOVERNORS ISLAND

BETWEEN THE

DIRECTOR AND COUNCIL OF NEW NETHERLANDS

AND

CAKAPETEYNO AND PEHIWAS

JUNE 16, 1637

WOUTER VAN TWILLER

DIRECTOR-GENERAL

[FROM THE MANUAL OF THE CORPORATION OF THE CITY OF NEW YORK]

ORIGINAL DEED

"The Director and Council of New Netherlands residing on the Island of Manahatas in the Fort Amsterdam under the Government of their High and Mighty Lords, the States General of the United Netherlands and the privileged West India Company, at their Chambers at Amsterdam, by these presents do publish and declare that on this day, the date underwritten before us, in their own person appeared and presented themselves, Cakapeteyno and Pehiwas as owners and declared that voluntarily and deliberately at the special charge of the Rulers and with the approbation of the Community for, and in consideration of, certain parcels of goods which they, the said appearers, before the passing of these presents, acknowledged to their full and grateful satisfaction to have received into their hands and power, they in their rightful ownership have transported, ceded, given over and conveyed and by these presents they do transport, cede, give over and convey to the behoof of Wouter Van Twiller, Director General of New Netherlands, the Nooten Island (Nut Island), in the Indian tongue called Pagganck, situate over against the Island Manahatas between the North and East Rivers of New Netherlands, and that with all the action right (and) equity which to them the said appearers in their said quality appertained, constituting and substituting the aforesaid Wouter Van Twiller in their place and stead in the real and actual possession thereof, and at the same time giving to the said Wouter Van Twiller or to his successors full and irrevocable power, authority and special license, *tanquam actor et procurator in rem suam ac propriam* the aforesaid land peaceably to possess, inhabit, cultivate and occupy, and also therewith and thereof to do,

trade, and dispose in the same manner in which he might do with his own lands honestly and lawfully without their the granters any longer any part, right, action or authority whatever, whether of ownership charge or jurisdiction, having, reserving or saving but to the behoof as aforesaid, now and forever from the same resisting and denouncing, abstaining and withdrawing, promising moreover not only by this their transport and whatever may have been done by virtue thereof forever by these presents, firmly, inviolably and irrevocably to maintain faithful and execute, but also the said Island, against all and everyone to deliver and maintain, free from all demands, prosecutions and incumbrances that thereto may be instituted by anyone—all in good faith, without fraud and deceit.

These presents are confirmed with our usual signatures and our seal thereto suspended.

Done on the aforesaid Island of Manahatas the sixteenth day of June, 1637.

Was Undersigned.

JACOBUS CORLER
ANDRIUS HUDDE
JACOBUS BONTYN
CLAUS VAN ELSLANT."

The "certain parcels of goods" mentioned in this document are believed to have been an axe head or two, a string of beads and a few nails.

We may gather an idea of the "parcel of goods" from the price paid for a sale of land on Long Island under William Kieft, Van Twiller's successor as Governor.

At a sale of land lying on Long Island under Governor Kieft by Seysey and Sipento and Ponitarannackhyne the parcels of goods were:

6 fathoms of cloth	10 knives	1 gun
6 fathoms of Wampum	10 harrow teeth	2 lbs lead
6 kettles	10 corals or beads	2 lbs powder
6 axes	10 bells	2 cloth coats
6 addices		*K. N.*

General James Grant Wilson in the year 1875 in conversation with her Majesty the Queen of Holland asked her whether she did not think sixty guilders a very small consideration for Manahatas Island, to which her Majesty promptly replied: "If the savages had received more for their land they would simply have drunk more fire water," which reflection will reconcile us to the very small amount involved in the "parcels of goods," for which our fair Island was signed away. However, if the Dutch made a good bargain in 1637, they did not do so well in 1667 when by the treaty of Breda they received Surinam as an equivalent for what is now New York!*

The doughty Van Twiller had arrived from Holland in "De Zoutberg" in 1633, bringing with him 104 soldiers, the first military force sent to the Province.

Van Twiller is believed to have been the only private owner of Governors Island. After his departure there were found "on Nut Island, containing about 80 morgens,† a house, 21

* The Articles of Capitulation for the surrender of Surinam (Dutch Guiana) were drawn up 6th May, 1667, and state that "Peace between the States and England consists in the absolute abolition of all pretence on either side—each to remain masters of what they were in possession of the 10/20 of May 1667."

† In Valentine's Manual we read that Nutten Island contained about 160 acres of land, an interesting fact in connection with the restored area amounting (1913) in all to 173 acres. "Morgen" is a word of Dutch origin denoting a land measure of 2.1 acres and was used with reference to the Dutch possessions in America.

pairs of goats, together with various goods and chattels." The Island was then directly occupied by the Government.

Van Twiller's Ambition

It was when Van Twiller knew he was to be superseded by Kieft (who was appointed in 1637, although he arrived in the Spring of 1638) that he resolved to make provision for himself. Accordingly he procured the attendance of Cakapateyno and Pehiwas, Indian owners of Pagganck, and before his Council at New Amsterdam and in consideration of certain goods received a Grant of the Island. At the same time the Indian owners of the two Islands at Hellgat also executed a deed in favour of Van Twiller.

The Van Twiller purchase was declared in violation of the West India Company's Charter. It was formally annulled by the Director General and Council July 1st, 1652. The Island was restored to the public domain and was considered a perquisite of the Governors, Dutch and English.

1680—The first place the Hollanders ever occupied in the Bay was this Island. It is now (1680) a farm with a house and a place upon it where the Governor keeps a parcel of sheep.

1669—July 5th—Saml Mavericke writes to Colonel Nicholls: "Nutten Island by ye makeing of a garden and planting of several walkes of fruite trees on it is made a very pleasant place"

1691—In discussing the bill for dividing the Province the Assembly objected to include Nutten Island which belongs to His Majesty's *Fort and Garrison and ought not to be comprehended in the County.

K. N.

---

* v. page 30.

We do not read of any fortifications in those early days on Nutten Island, Van Twiller's soldiers being undoubtedly quartered in Fort Amsterdam, but in 1639 the saw mill on the Island was leased by the "Honorable, Wise and Right prudent, Mr. William Kieft" to Evert Bischop, Siebout Claesen and Harman Bastiensen. They were to pay five hundred merchantable or sound planks, one-half pine and the other oak and to saw not less than 65 to the bulk.

We read in an old record that this saw mill was probably worked by the tide in the River (Buttermilk Channel). Peter Stuyvesant found this mill completely ruined and useless, and in January 1648 he and the Council resolved that the best interests of the Company required that it be dismantled by removing the iron work from it by burning the mill.

J. H. Innes in his "New Amsterdam and Its People" states that the machinery for a saw mill arrived from Holland about 1626. "This mill was worked by wind power after the Holland fashion and was erected on the shores of Nutten—now Governors—Island, a situation which will seem the less singular if one calls to mind not only the facilities for floating logs to the spot from the neighbouring shores but also the one hundred acres and more on the Island itself.

The ancient engraving (p. 14) shows a windmill near Fort Amsterdam. In 1631 a windmill stood on Heere Straat (Broadway) near what is now Courtland Street. Governor Van Twiller began the enlargement of Fort Amsterdam at Bowling Green in 1633. This Fort was 300 x 250 feet, with stone bastions. It contained within the walls the Governors House, used for official and social purposes, and a stone Garrison Chapel, 72 x 52 feet in size.

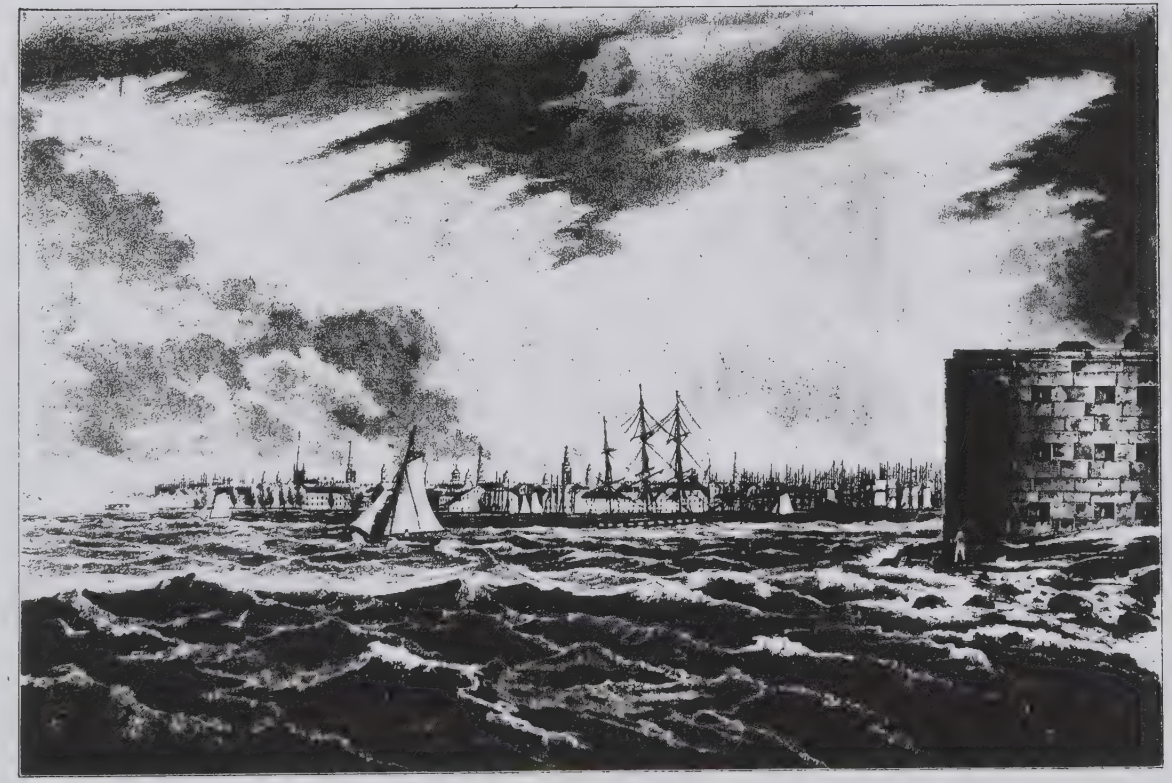
Following upon the English occupation the Chaplains were priests of the Church of England. The list follows:

1678-1723

Rev. Charles Wooley, graduate of Cambridge	Aug.	1678 to July 1680
Rev. Dr. John Gordon		1683
Rev. Josias Clark	June	1684 to 1686
Rev. Alexander Innes	April	1686
Rev. John Miller, M. A.	Mar.	1691-2
Rev. John Peter Brisac		1701
Rev. Edmond Mott		1696
Rev. Simon Smith		1699
Rev. John Sharp, M. A.		1704
Rev. Robert Jenny		1717-22
Rev. James Overn		1723

Trinity Church Parish was chartered by Royal Grant from King William III in 1697. The Chapel in the Fort was destroyed by fire in 1741 and the Rev^{d}. James Overn was the last Chaplain.

It appears that the heart of the doughty Governors Petrus Stuyvesant was grieved by an apparent neglect of his fortifications and elaborate orders were issued about this matter which are of sufficient interest to quote as typical of the grandiloquent phraseology of the day and because in 1810, after a lapse of 157 years, Colonel Burbeck, Commanding the Forces in New York Harbour, had occasion to issue a similar order with reference to the Garrison of Fort Columbus on Governors Island. (v. page 79.)



PAINTED BY
W. C WALL

CASTLE WILLIAMS
IN 1823

Burgomaster and Schepens,
in session at New Amsterdam,
13th MARCH, 1653.

1st. The Burger Watch is already in operation and His High Mightiness the Director General is requested to furnish fire and light.
2nd. It is ordered that Manhattans shall be defended with palisades and breastworks.
3rd. That the Fort be put in better state of defence.
4th. That the sum of from 4 thousand to 5 thousand guilders be levied by tax.
Whereupon His Mightiness Werckhoven was charged 200 guilders and others in proportion

In the same month of 1653, the Director General, exercising vigilant supervision over the military works, addresses the Burgomaster and Schepens:

"Most Worshipful, Gracious and Distinguished:

With great grief of heart do we witness the destruction that the Hogs are doing to the (Banks) Fortifications of the Fortress Particularly now again as formerly. * * * We see with pain and shame the Hogs daily are about the banks to the ruin of the same.

We remain,

Most Worshipful, Gracious and Distinguished

P. STUYVESANT".

It is encouraging to read an order on March 31st that a heardsman is to be provided and a warning in August that all burgers are to shut up their Hogs till the fortress shall be completed.

ARENT VAN HALTEN
WILLS BEECKMAN
ALLARD ANTONY.

The next communication from the Burger and Schepens is to the effect that they will "Cooperate in fortifying and defending the City with all their might," and shortly after this comes the proclamation of Peace between Holland and England, "with printed handbills and the ringing of the bells according to the custom".

K. N.

The Dutch held Governors Island (with interruptions) from 1637 to 1674 and the British held it for a century and a year, as shown in the following list:

LORDS OF GOVERNORS ISLAND

DUTCH AND ENGLISH COLONIAL GOVERNORS

WOUTER VAN TWILLER, Appointed	April,		1633
Bought Governors Island 16th	June,		1637
WILLIAM KIEFT, Appointed	Mch.	28,	1638
PETRUS STUYVESANT	May	11,	1647
RICHARD NICOLLS	Sept.	8,	1664
FRANCIS LOVELACE	Aug.	17,	1668
CORNELIS EVERTSE, JR., and a Council of War	Aug. (N. S.)	12,	1673
ANTHONY COLVE	Sept.	19,	1673
EDMUND ANDROS	Nov. (N. S.)	10,	1674
ANTHONY BROCKHOLLES, Commander-in-Chief	Nov.	16,	1677
SIR EDMUND ANDROS, Knight	Aug.	7,	1678
ANTHONY BROCKHALES, Commander-in-Chief	Jany. (N. S.)	13,	1681
THOMAS DONGAN	Aug.	27,	1683
SIR EDMUND ANDROS, Knight	Aug.	11,	1688

Francis Nicholson, Lieut.-Governor	Oct. 9, 1688	
Jacob Leisler	June 3, 1686	
Harry Sloughter	Mch. 19, 1691	
Richard Ingolsby, Commander-in-Chief	July 26, 1691	
Benjamin Fletcher	Aug. 30, 1692	
The Earl of Bellomont	April 13, 1698	
John Nanfan, Lieut.-Governor	May 17, 1699	
The Earl of Bellomont	July 24, 1700	
Colonel William Smith	Mch. 5, 1701 to May 19, 1701	Council
Colonel Abraham De Peyster		
Colonel Peter Schuyler		
John Nanfan, Lieut.-Governor	May 19, 1701	
Lord Cornbury	May 3, 1702	
Lord Lovelace	Dec. 18, 1708	
Peter Schuyler, President	May 6, 1709	
Richard Ingolsby, Lieut.-Governor	May 9, 1709	
Peter Schuyler, President	May 25, 1709	
Richard Ingolsby, Lieut.-Governor	June 1, 1709	
Gerardus Beekman, President	April 10, 1710	
Robert Hunter	June 14, 1710	
Peter Schuyler, President	July 21, 1710	
William Burnet	Sept. 17, 1720	
John Montgomerie	April 15, 1728	
Rip Van Dam, President	July 1, 1731	
William Cosby	Aug. 1, 1732	
George Clarke, President	Mch. 10, 1736	
George Clarke, Lieut.-Governor	Oct. 30, 1736	
George Clinton	Sept. 2, 1743	
Sir Danvers Osborne, Bart	Oct. 10, 1753	
James De Lancey, Lieut.-Governor	Oct. 12, 1755	
Sir Charles Hardy, Knight	Sept. 3, 1755	
James De Lancey, Lieut.-Governor	June 3, 1757	
Cadwallader Colden, President	Aug. 4, 1760	

Cadwallader Colden, Lieut.-Governor	Aug.	8,	1761
Robert Monckton	Oct.	26,	1761
Cadwallader Colden, Lieut.-Governor	Nov.	18,	1761
Robert Monckton	June	14,	1762
Cadwallader Colden, Lieut.-Governor	June	28,	1763
Sir Henry Moore, Bart	Nov.	13,	1765
Cadwallader Colden, Lieut.-Governor	Nov.	12,	1769
Earl of Dunmore	Oct.	19,	1770
William Tryon	July	9,	1771
Cadwallader Colden, Lieut.-Governor	April	7,	1774
William Tryon	June	28,	1775

Military Governors, not recognized by the State of New York

James Robertson	Mch.	23,	1780
Andrew Elliott, Lieut.-Governor	April	17,	1783

CHAPTER II.

The English Colonial and Revolutionary Period 1674-1783

In 1698 the Island was set aside by the Assembly as being "part of the Denizen of His Majestie's Fort at New York for the benefit and accommodation of his Majestie's Governors for the time being," and hence it came to be familiarly called "The Governor's Island." In the course of time the word "The" has been eliminated from the title by common usage. Some authorities dispense with the possessive apostrophe, but this use has not been generally adopted.* An example is found in the use of "The," as referred to, in a letter from Governor Tryon to the Earl of Dartmouth, dated 5th September, 1775, in which he says:

> "The City has remained quiet * * * Fresh provisions are to be delivered on the Governor's Island for the Asia."

The later Governors in some cases leased the Island for their own profit. There is a tradition that Governor Clinton leased the Island for a race course to a Dr. Price who built a hotel in 1784 and that horse races were run upon it in 1784-5. The account given by F. B. Hough in the Historical and Statistical Record of the University of the State of New York is authentic. He says:

> "By Act of March 31, 1790, for the encouragement of education, Governor's Island was granted to the Regents unless needed for Military purposes. The Committee consisted of Genl Schuyler, M^{r} L'Hommedieu and

* The Eastern Department in official papers some time since discontinued the use of the apostrophe.

> Mr Benson. It was leased to Mr John Price for twenty one years at an annual rental of £93 with a deduction for taxes." However, this was not to last long, for, as the Report goes on to state, "in 1794 Commissioners were appointed to erect fortifications, works were begun on Governor's Island and the Regents' title was voided."

Other works cooperating later with the fortifications of Governors Island may be mentioned as throwing light upon the progress of military art in the early days of the Province. Fort Amsterdam (at Bowling Green) not having been completed up to the time of Van Twiller's arrival in 1633, the structure was finished in 1635.* A barracks for the newly arrived soldiers was built within the walls, while to the south was erected the (garrison) Church in Governor Kieft's time, 1642. The principal gate opened upon Bowling Green and was guarded by a small redoubt called a horn, which many think stood just where the present enclosed area now is. In 1664 when the English took New York the name of the fort was changed to Fort James, later to Fort Anne and then to Fort George.

In 1667 Governor Nicolls referred to Bedlow's Island as the "largest of the Oyster Islands." It received its name from Isaac Bedlow, patentee under Governor Nicolls. Fort Wood was erected on this Island in 1841 at a cost of $21,300. It mounted 77 guns and accommodated a garrison of 350 men. This was built upon the site of the first fortifications erected about the year 1800.

Governor Lovelace in 1669 issued a commission for Isaac Bedlow (Bedloo) as follows, and a year later conferred special privileges upon Love Island, which later became known as Bedlow's Island and is so called today:

---

* See illustration, p. 14.

COMMISSION FOR MR. ISAAC BEDLOO
TO BEE CAPT. OF A FFOOT-COMPANY IN THIS CITY.

1669. By Vertue of ye Commission & Authority unto mee given by his Royall Highness James Duke of Yorke and Albany &c—I doe Constitute & Appoint you Isaac Bedloo to bee Captn of a Foot Company Lysted or to bee Lysted wth in this City and precincts. You are to take into yor Charge & Care ye said Company as Captaine thereof & duely to Exercise both yor inferiour Officrs & Souldyers in Armes & to use your best care, skill & Endeavour to keep them in good Order & Discipline; hereby requiring all inferiour Officers and Souldyers under yor Command to obey you as their Captaine; * * * * according to ye Discipline of Warr. Given under my Hand & Seale ye 1rst day of [ ] in ye 21th yeare of his Maties Reigne, Anno Domini 1669.

FRANCIS LOVELACE.

From Minutes of the Executive Council of the Province of New York.

On August 10, 1670, Lovelace gave the new name of "Love Island" to a "Certaine Little Island in ye Bay neare this Citty comonly called Oyster Island" for which Bedlow had had a "patent graunted by Col Richard Nicolls and the Island was made a "Priviledged place where no Warrant of Attachmt or arrest shall be made of force or served unless it be by ye Governors Speciall Warrant in Cases of breach of ye peace or Cryminall Mattrs."

Ellis Island, called at one time Gibbet Island on account of the execution of a number of pirates upon it, called also Bucking Island in 1674, and Oyster Island in 1808, had Fort Gibson built upon it in 1841 at a cost of $5,096, mounting 15 guns manned by a garrison of 80 men.

As early as 1809 the Secretary of War reports on Bedlow's Island a mortar battery, and on Ellis Island an open barbette battery for heavy ordnance.

A council was held at Fort William Henry on the 26th of September, 1691, at which it was decreed that Nutten Island and the so-called Oyster Islands, viz, Bedlow's, Ellis and a third (smaller) Island now submerged, be added to the County of New York, whereupon Colonel Cortlandt and Chidley Brooks, Esq., brought back the bill to the Assembly desiring to except Nutten Island from the provisions of the bill inasmuch as it "belongs to his Majestie's Fort and Garrison." This decision being sent up again to the Fort and approved by the Governor and Council, the bill was finally sent to England for the King's approval and it was confirmed May 2nd, 1708, Nutten Island being excepted from the County, but later by the Montgomery Charter of 1750 Governors Island was made part of the City of New York and by act of March 7, 1788, of the County of New York.

In this connection it is interesting to note the more romantic way in which our sister (Staten) Island gained her alliance with the Empire State.

Colonel Morris in his History of Staten Island states that under the Dutch rule Staten Island taxes were collected by the New Jersey authorities without protest. When the English came into power a number of the settlers on the Island refused to pay taxes altogether.

In 1668, the trouble between the interested parties increasing, James, Duke of York, who had been made by his brother, King Charles II, the nominal ruler of the English Provinces in America, decided that "all Islands in the Harbour of New York which could be circumnavigated in twenty-four hours should belong to the Colony of New York; otherwise, to New Jersey," whereupon Captain Christopher Billopp, commander

PAINTED BY
F. WILLA

GOVERNORS ISLAND

IN 1750

of a little vessel at the port of Perth Amboy, made the voyage around Staten Island with an hour or so to spare. It is said that he covered the deck of his vessel with empty barrels, thus gaining considerable sailing power. His reward from the Duke was the present of a tract of land of 1163 acres.

The village of Tottenville now stands upon this tract. In spite of the settlement made by the Duke of York the question of State ownership still remained more or less open between New York and New Jersey until it was finally adjusted to mutual satisfaction in 1833.

The English Colonial Governors Sloughter, Fletcher and Cornbury, from 1691 to 1702 urged the fortification of New York Harbour. All that was secured was £1500 for defences at the Narrows, which sum, a large one at that day, was expended by Lord Cornbury for a pleasure house on Governors Island to which he and other Governors were wont to retire to "free themselves from business." The picturesque title it bore described it well, no doubt—"The Smiling Garden of the Sovereigns of the Province." Governor Clarke in 1738 again urged the importance of proper defences. Lord Loudoun's arrival with a large fleet in 1756, however, allayed fears of invasion and until March 23d, 1780, Governors Island was successively the perquisite and residence of Governors Hardy, Delancy, Colden, Moore, Dunmore and Tryon.* Other Governors leased it during their terms of office, as we learn incidentally from a communication to Lord Dunmore.

In 1770 Richard Deane petitioned Lord Dunmore in the following plaintive strain: "Your Lordship's Petitioner most humbly showeth that he hath rented an Island called the Governors Island from his Honour * * * that he hath

* Governor Kieft, who succeeded Van Twiller, had a plantation on the Island which he leased at an annual rental of 150 pounds of tobacco.

been at great expence cultivating said Island * * * that your Lordship's Petitioner hath been led by Ruleing hand of kind Providence to be your Lordship's first tenant in America * * * And your Petitioner as in duty bound will not only ever pray—but will pay your Lordship's Rent very punctually." It does not appear from what has come down to posterity just what Richard Deane desired to obtain from his noble landlord, but let us hope the sentiment with which he closed his appeal had the desired effect.

Lord Cornbury came into possession of the Island as Governor of the Province of New York in 1702 and caused £1500 to be raised by various assessments, among the many enumerated being a "tax of Five shillings and six pence for every person that Wares a Perl Ring: Every Bachelor above the Age of twenty-five years two shillings and five pence," and used that money, according to Lt.-Governor Cadwallader Colden, and as above noted, to build a pleasure house for himself and succeeding Governors.

It is not known on what part of the Island this Governor's House was situated. It seems most reasonable to suppose that Lord Cornbury chose the finest situation for elevation and general outlook in the middle of the Island where the present Fort Jay now stands. The building on the N. E. elevation of the Island was called "the Governor's House" as late as 1840, but there appears no other reason than that to suppose it was built by Lord Cornbury.

An oil painting from the collection of the late Revd. Charles Hoffman, D. D., now the property of his daughter, Mrs. J. Van Vechten Olcott of New York, marked "Governor's Island 1750—F. Willa," shows a fine structure upon the N. E. part of the Island where the quondam Post Headquarters building now stands. This building is so massive and extensive that it appears incredible it should have dis-

appeared and left no trace behind. The presence in the channel of many Dutch vessels (1750) and other apparent inconsistencies lead to a belief that the artist may have made the building from description.

Another interesting suggestion offered by Captain J. G. Phelps Stokes of the 9th Coast Defense Command N. G. N. Y., is that the structure in Willa's painting represents Lord Cornbury's plan, which was never carried out.

In Kelby's notes a reference to this painting discloses the fact that it was at one time the property of Governor Clinton, then of Colonel J. R. S. Denton of Newark, from whom it was purchased by the Revd Dr. Hoffman in 1893.

The painting shows the old Traders' Wharf, foot of Whitehall Street, with Gibbet Island (now Ellis Island) and the Jersey Shore. The ships fly the Dutch and Spanish flags. The painting of the groups is remarkably fine.

The pomp and circumstance attending the office of Governor at this period and the formality of official language are well illustrated in an Address presented to Lord Cornbury upon his arrival. This is taken from the Minutes of the Common Council of the City of New York, published by authority:

> To His Excellency the Right Honble EDUARD LORD CORNBURY Capt Genll and Governour in Chiefe of his Majesties Province of New Yorke and Territories depending thereon in America and Vice Admiral of the same, &c.*
>
> The Humble Address of the Mayor Al[d]ermen and Commonality of the City of New Yorke
>
> (486) May itt please your Excellency
>
> In the Name and on the behalfe of the Freemen and Inhabitants of this his Majesties Corporation and City

* Edward Hyde, Lord Cornbury, 3rd Earl of Clarendon, succeeded in 1709 to the title of his father, Henry, 2nd Earl of Clarendon.

of New Yorke Wee doe heartily Congratulate your Lordships safe Arrival in this your Government & as Wee Cannot Entertain to Gratefull A sence of his Majesties Royall bounty * * * in making soe Excellent and prudent A Choice in sending your Lordship A person of so great and Noble birth Skillfull in the Art of Warr * * * to secure us from the * * * Enemy Abroad and Cause us to flourish with * * * Tranquility att home * * * soe Shall we Studiously Endeavour to Demonstrate and Express that Gratitude in our ready Complyance with Everything in our power which Your Lordship * * * shall judge Necessary and Contribute to his Majesties' Service and Honour * * * That God in his Infinite Mercy and goodness will Vouchsafe to bless his Majesty with A long And happy Reign Over us * * * is the fervent prayer of

Your Lordship's most dutifull

May, 1702. humble servants.

That the cost of living was high in New York in the time of Cornbury as now we learn from an order published for the benefit of officers and soldiers by the Common Council of the City of New York held at the City Hall on Tuesday the 26th day of May Anno Dom 1702, at which were present

Thomas Noell, Esqr., Mayor,
Sampson Shelton Broughton, Esqr., Recorder and ten Aldermen.

The order is as follows:

WHEREAS his most sacred Majesty Among many Other princely favours Shown to this Province hath sent Over during the Late Warr A Considerable Number of forces to protect and secure us from the Insults

> of our Enemies the French of Canada and their Indians * * * And Whereas all manner of Provisions and Apparrell are much dearer in this Citty than in England whereby the said Soldiers Cannot Conveniently subsist of their pay only, but the most of them being Tradesmen which had they A Liberty to Exercise within this Corporation itt would not Only Enable them to live [492] Comfortably but Impede their dissertion and Encourage them *in them* in their duty, * * * And Whereas by the By Laws of this Corporation No person Whatever Can Keep Shop or Exercise Any handy Craft Trade or Occupation but such as are Freeman thereof, Therefore this Court doe hereby Resolve and Order that all the Officers and Soldiers (who are his Majesties Natural born Subjects belonging to his Majesties Garrison Forte William Henry* within this Citty be made Freemen of this Corporation Gratis & Ordered that the Mayor Recorder and Aldermen Administer unto them the Oath of A Freeman and Grant them Certificates thereof under the seale of the Citty and that the Towne Clerke Register their Names as Freemen Accordingly Any former Law to the Contrary in Anywise Notwithstanding.

The provisions of this humane regulation were extended, as far as possible, to the troops later stationed on Governors Island.

In 1710 large bodies of Palatines were sent to America and it was decided by the Colonial Authorities that Nutten Island was the "properest place to put them," and two carpenters, Johannes Hebon and Peter Williamse, were ordered to "wait on the President† to Nutten Island at two in the afternoon with respect to Building huts" for the Exiles. Governor Hunter immediately established special Courts of Judicature "because the said Island lyeth not within the body of any

---

*The Fort at Bowling Green. †Peter Schuyler.

County of this Province and in noe wise subject to the Jurisdiction of any of the Courts that are established within the same."

It is stated that from seven to ten thousand of these exiles were encamped here at one time. They were later sent up the Hudson to Greene and Columbia Counties, where their descendants may be found to this day.

The Palatinate Refugees arrived in June of 1710. On July 12th of the same year Governor Hunter and his Council erected Courts of Judicature so that cases occurring among them might be locally tried and adjusted. As many as 250 of these unfortunates died and were buried on Governors Island. *K. N.*

Governor Cosby during his office used Governors Island for a game preserve. In 1738 the Legislature passed an act to preserve the breed of English pheasants in this colony. The Act declares that "whereas the late Governor (Cosby) did place about one half dozen couple of English pheasants upon Nutten Island and pinioned them to the end that they might remain there to propagate their species with a view that their increase would spread from there and stock the country with their kind; and whereas the said fowls not only have increased vastly upon the said Island but many of them have already spread over to Nassau (Long Island) and in all probability will soon stock the country if people are restrained from destroying them for a few years, the present Governor being also desirous that the whole Colony may be stocked with these birds—it is enacted that no birds shall be killed nor eggs taken for one year." So from the time the 103 head of cattle were landed on Pagganck Island from the "New Netherlands" in 1623 and Wouter Van Twiller

had his 21 pairs of goats in 1637 and the Government in 1738 went into the business of pheasant farming, down to the present day, when the squirrels introduced by Major-General Nelson A. Miles in 1895 are still under official protection, our Island has maintained a creditable reputation for interest in animal life.

The Governors of that period, however, took thought for more important matters than the propagation of valuable birds, as we learn from Governor Clarke's speech of 5th September, 1738, in which he strongly recommends fortifications.

Addressing the Legislature the 15th of April, 1741, he said: "There is great cause to apprehend a speedy rupture with France. Your situation ought therefore to awaken you to see the importance of erecting batteries in proper places * * * and one at Red Hook to prevent the enemy landing upon Governors Island." Governor Clinton, addressing the Assembly April 17th, 1744, also urged action to prevent the enemy landing any force or artillery on Nutten Island.

The first mention of troops on Governors Island is in connection with Major-General William Pepperell's Regiment as follows:

"NEW YORK, June the 3rd, 1755.

> Rec'd of the Honorable James De Lansea, Esq., the sum of Three Pounds, fourteen shillings and nine pence for five cords and three quarters of Oak wood for the use of Sir. Wm. Pepperell's Regiment encamped on Nutten Island in full pr. Me ben hildreth."

It is interesting to note that this Major-General Sir William Pepperell was an American Soldier, born in Kittery, Maine, in 1696. In 1726 Pepperell was made Colonel of

Militia and in 1730 a Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas.

In 1745 he was Commander-in-chief of the New England force of 4000 men which, assisted by a British Squadron under Commodore Peter Warren, captured the French fortress of Louisburg. For his services Pepperell was created a baronet, the only New Englander so honoured. He received the rank of Lieutenant-General in 1759.

General James Grant Wilson and John Fiske say of Pepperell that "the greater names of Washington and the Revolutionary generals have eclipsed that of Pepperell, but it should not be forgotten that he did more than any other man to prepare the army that was afterward to achieve American independence."

A later reference to the regiment of Sir William is found in a bill for straw under date of Aug. 23, 1755, when it was stationed on Governors Island:

To Cornelius Tiebout.
To 322 bundles straw for Gene'l Pepparill's Redgement, @ 4 d. £5" 7" 4.

The following orders, taken from the certified minutes of the Common Council, make mention of the Military Establishment on Governors Island in official records.

At a Common Council held at the City Hall of the said City on Saturday the 28th day of August, Anno Dom. 1756,

(462)

Mr. Mayor Informed this board that Collo. Young in the name of Collo. Stanwich Desired that this Corporation would be pleased to advance and furnish his Majesties' forces on Nutten Island with Straw and wood during their Stay there, whereupon this board having Considered the Same Do agree that this board Do advance on the Credit of the Government a Sum not exceeding fifty pounds for the purpose aforesaid.

Governor Hardy as early as 1756 saw the strategical importance of Governors Island and wrote as follows:

Governor Hardy to the Lords of Trade.

FORT GEORGE, NEW YORK
27 October. 1756.

* * * * * * *

It will be highly proper to put this Province into a State of Defence from any attack by Sea. * * * Some heavy cannon should be mounted upon Nutten Island on the Ground that if the enemy should attack the City with a fleet they will make themselves masters of it from whence they can easily bombard the City.

*Fort George has gone through great repair and is now compleated. Two sides and three bastions command the Rivers leading to the City. Your Lordships will please observe that they (the cannon) are all but one 12 and 9 pounders, pour ordinance for such a defence. * * *

We have not one mortar or cohorn. Lord Loudon is returned to Fort Edward.

I have the honour to be

Your Lordships'
Most obedient and humble servant,
CHARLES HARDY.

THE ROYAL AMERICAN REGIMENT

References to a Colonial Regiment styled the Royal Americans are found in the following orders. It will be noticed that the date is twenty years preceding the Declaration of Independence:

---

*A stone in Battery Park just west of the Custom House has an inscription designating the spot as the S. W. Bastion of Fort George.

No. 1345 Warrant issued.

COMMON COUNCILL,
City Hall, Oct. 19,
Anno Domini, 1756.

Order'd the Like of Mr. Christopher Bancker or his order the Sum of Nine pounds two shillings in full for the Like sum by him advanced and paid for his fire wood for the use of the Royall Americans on Nutten Island as per his said Account Audited by this board and allowed of.

No. 1346 Warrant issued.

MEETING OF COMMON COUNCILL,
City Hall, Nov. 8, 1756.

Ordered that Mr. Recorder issue his warrant to the Treasurer of the City to pay to Jacob Bremington or his order the sum of five pounds four shillings in full of his account for Straw by him provided for the Royal Americans.

Ten years later we read in Captain John Montressor's Journal of further plans for the fortification of Governors Island. Captain Montressor was styled the "Chief Engineer of America," and he reports as follows under date of Sept. 9, 1766:

> Delivered to the Commander in Chief my Report. Made my design on a Scale of 200 feet to the inch for fortifying Governor's or Nutten Island."

And again:

MAY 12, 1767.

> On return from inspection at Albany, May 12th, a fair wind & the 13th at York. The whole Regiment was found encamped on the Island, the 22nd and two Battalions of Royal Americans. Encamped outside of ye Stockade also the 44th."

This Report indicates the presence of two Regiments in addition to the Royal Americans and makes incidental reference to a stockade which probably enclosed the main Garrison.

From the *New York Mercury* we read of another Organization

William Richardson, a soldier belonging to Captain Crookshank's Independent Company of Fuzaleers, was shot on Nutten Island for desertion October 17th, 1757.

K. N.

The *Mercury* of Oct. 24th

Rowland Brown on the same charge was reprieved on showing no intention to desert.

The Assessment Roll of 1793 gives Nutten Island as valued at £800 and the tax was fixed at £4 7s 4d.

K. N.

In Jared Sparks' Life of Washington we learn something of the formation of this Regiment, the first one of which there is record by name on Governors Island.

"Lord Loudoun as Commander of the forces in America," he says, "was empowered to raise a Regiment in the Colonies consisting of four battalions to be commanded by officers bearing the King's Commission and called the Royal American Regiment. Recruiting officers were employed in Virginia enlisting men for the Royal Regiment. The Assembly voted £8000 to be paid for enlisting men and transporting them to New York.

The Maryland Assembly appropriated £5000 to aid enlistments in that Colony for the Royal Americans and resolved to raise 300 men. A bounty was given not exceeding £5 for each man enlisted.

Horatio Gates, later (June, 1775) Adjutant-General in the American Army with the rank of brigader-general, was an officer in this Regiment. Gates was aide-de-camp to General Monckton in his expedition against Martinique in 1762. He was a bearer of despatches to London announcing the successful result of this victory and was rewarded by being made Major in the Royal Americans.

It is fair to assume he was stationed on Governors Island in 1767, for Captain John Montressor in his Report of May 12th in that year, says he "found the whole Regiment encamped on the Island, the 22d, and two Battalions of Royal Americans, also the 44th Regt." (p. 40).

In the Military Department of the New York Public Library is a valuable set of Army lists of the British Forces, published by order of the Honorable Secretary at War, of separate volumes in superb bindings, 1754 to 1842. The volumes bear the crest and bookplate of Colonel FitzClarence, Earl of Munster, who died in London, 1842. The changes in the personnel of the various years are carefully written in. From these reports we learn that the 62nd Regiment of Foot was styled "Royal Americans" in 1756. In 1757 the number was changed to 60th Regt. of Foot and so remained.

The uniform of the Royal Americans originally was Red faced with Blue, but as we learn from these Reports, the uniform was changed in 1770 to "Red faced with Blue, White Lace, with 2 blue Stripes."

The uniform of the 44th Regiment of Foot, stationed in 1767 on Governors Island, was Red faced with Yellow.

The uniform of the 22d Regiment of Foot, which we learn from Montressor's Report was here with the Royal Americans, was Red faced with pale Blue.

John Campbell, 4th Earl of Loudoun, was appointed Commander in Chief of the British forces in America, March

GENERAL SIR JEFFREY AMHERST

COMMANDER OF THE ROYAL AMERICAN REGIMENT
60TH FOOT

20, 1756. Lord Loudoun commanded the Royal Americans for a number of years with the title "Colonel in Chief," having under his command in 1756 four "Colonels Commandant," viz.: John Stanwix, Joseph Dusseaux, Charles Jefferyes, James Prevost and Majors J. Young, J. Robertson, J. Rutherford, Augustine Prevost and Chaplains Thomas Gawton and Wm. Nicholas Jackson.

General Sir Jeffrey Amherst commanded the Royal Americans for a long period. The well known painting of Sir Jeffrey by Sir Joshua Reynolds, as engraved by Watson, hangs in the Officers Club, South Battery. The 1st Battalion of the Royal Americans was the Governors Island Battalion. The town of Amherst, Massachusetts, where Amherst College is located, was named after Sir Jeffery Amherst.

Eighteen years later, when the Regiment had been for a year at Jamaica and Antigua, many names of the officers, advanced in grade, and of Chaplain Jackson, are still found which were on the roster of 1756 at Governors Island.

The Royal American, 60th Regiment of Foot, is (1922) the King's Royal Rifle Corps. Uniform, Green with Scarlet facings.

Motto:

Celer
et
Audax

During the Revolutionary War concerts were given by the Royal American Band at Burns' New Assembly Rooms. This popular assembly, where the fashionables gathered much as they do at Delmonico's and Sherry's today, was at the upper end of Bowling Green, near the Van Courtlandt House.

Benedict Arnold lodged here for a time after his desertion from the Army.*

Another reference is found to this early Governors Island Regiment during the Stamp Act troubles when General Gage ordered Fort George at Bowling Green to be dismantled in order to appear to the people "Less menacing and unfriendly." The work was performed by the detachments of Royal Artillery, assisted by the Royal American Regiment who went over from Governors Island for that purpose.†

* A monument passed daily by hurrying throngs who scarcely pay it the tribute of a glance is in Battery Park just west of the Custom House near the Subway station. Its inscription is of interest in this connection and is as follows:

"To perpetuate the site of the S. W. Bastion of Fort George
In 40° 42′ 8″ N. Latitude as observed by
Captain John Montressor
and
David Rittenhouse
October, 1766."
The Corporation of the City of New York have erected
This Monument A. D. MDCCCXVIII.

† In the first edition of this History the following note occurred:

"The references to The Royal American Regiment, 60th Foot, have met with very kind reception on the part of The King's Royal Rifle Corps, 60th Foot. This distinguished Regiment, which is identical with the original Royal American Regiment preserves the number of 60th as it had when on Governors Island in Colonial days. His Majesty King George V. graciously accepted a copy of the History and the Author had an interesting correspondence with Lord Grenfell, Senior Colonel of the King's Royal Rifles and with Colonel Butler, the Historian of the Regiment, both of whom expressed satisfaction that the memory of their Corps is so warmly cherished in the place where it served for so long a period. It is hoped that as time goes on and the great War in which England and America have fought as Allies becomes a matter of history there may be an opportunity to bring together in some way the military descendants of this famous Corps and the present representatives of the American Army stationed on Governors Island."

How this hope was most remarkably fulfilled will be found described on page 231.

The Revolution

It was not long before the mutterings of war were heard. An intimation of this which shows that Governors Island was of value not only for "refreshment after the cares of business," but for more important reasons, is disclosed in a letter from Governor Tryon to the Earl of Dartmouth.

New York, 16th Oct. 1775

My Lord:—

The City has been in continual agitation and ferment encreased by a recommenda'tn and resolve of the Continental Congress that this provincial Congress should take into consideration the expediency of siezing or securing the Crown Officers * * * I kept out of Town all Thursday at the Governor's Island and in the evening the Asia boat landed me at Long Island and (I) lay at Mr. Astell's at Flatbush.

In a letter to Lord Dartmouth under date of June 7th, 1775, the Governor speaks of "the critical and dangerous situation of the British soldiers quartered in New York, the men deserting in considerable numbers and being the object of attack.

General Gage proposed putting the soldiers and their families on board H. B. M. S. "Asia." After some delay, the situation becoming more acute, the following order was issued:

5th June, 1775

To Major Hamilton,
18th Regiment,
Spring Hill.

The difficulty about the Women and children which occasioned an alteration of our first Determination to put the troops under Command on board of the Asia being

obviated by removing the Women to Governor's Island * * * You have my leave to encamp the Women on the Governor's Island and if there is any room in the House which the Family who live there do not make use of, I am willing the women should have it. You will please to give orders that they by no means burn or destroy the Fences or do any kind of Injury to any thing on the Island.

I am, etc.,

CADWALLADER COLDEN,
Lieut. Gov'r Province of New York.

A citadel and outworks were begun in 1775. General orders of April 16th, 1775, read: "Colonel Prescott's Regiment is to encamp on Governors Island * * * They are to give every assistance in their power to the works erecting thereon." This Regiment, the famous Bunker Hill Regiment, was joined later by the 4th Continental Infantry, Colonel Nixon Commanding.

Some highly interesting facts in regard to the fortification of the Island at this period are learned from a letter written by Benjamin Franklin to General Lee in which he encloses a long communication from Trevor Newland Stafford. The fact of its quotation implies Franklin's approval of the sentiments expressed by Stafford. Extracts from the letter follow:

To the Honourable CHARLES LEE, Esq.,
Lieut.-General of the Continental Army,
New York.

5th February, 1776.

* * * * * * *

I'm amazed at a ship or two laying at New York in open violation of ye United Provinces. The Asia lay

along in the North River and refused to go into ye Sound. * * * There is Nutten (Governor's Island) well situated to place Guns and I imagine 300 or 400 men would be sufficient to compleat all the works in one night: the greatest difficulty would be to get cannon to Nutten Island. It would be impossible to point out Either the facilitys or difficultys in the course of a letter. The greatest difficulty will be to keep it secret from the people of New York. * * * If there was a lodgement with some Guns upon Nutten Island * * * as soon as the Batterys upon Nutten Island began to play there should be some of the Connecticut men ready to run down upon the Wharfs with some few guns ahead and astern with grape to clear the decks and fire into the ports. Six Guns would be sufficient upon Nutten Island and 12 pdrs would be heavy enough. * * * I imagine Lord Stirling would be a very proper person to command the detachment.*

B. FRANKLIN.

That the fortifications were finally completed we learn from a letter written three months later by General Washington to Lieutenant-General Charles Lee, as follows:

NEW YORK, May 9, 1776.

MY DEAR LEE:

We have done a great deal of work at this place. In a fortnight more I think the City will be in a very respectable posture of defense. * * * Governor's Island has a large and strong work erected and a Regiment encamped there. All the ships of war have left

* From the Lee Papers—New York Historical Society.

this place and gone down to the Hook except the Asia * * * With compliments to the gentlemen of my acquaintance with you and with the most fervent wishes for your health and success,

I remain your most affectionate

G. WASHINGTON.

That the guns mounted on Governors Island gave an account of themselves we learn from the journal of Lieut.-Colonel Stephen Kemble* of H. M. 60th Foot. He notes under date of July 6, 1776, two months following Washington's statement, that Governors Island has a large and strong work—"Observe the Rebels have fortified Governor's Island very strongly"—and on July 12, 1776, that "About half after three in the Afternoon His Majesty's Ship Phœnix, commanded by Captain Parker, and the Rose, by Captain Wallace, with the Tryal Schooner and two Tenders got under sail to pass the Town of New York.

* * * * * * *

* Stephen Kemble was born in New Brunswick, New Jersey. In 1740 he was commissioned an Ensign in H. M. 44th Regt. of Foot, and in 1765 a captain in the Royal Americans, H. M. 60th Foot.

Colonel Kemble served under General Gage and Sir William Howe later in Boston, and in 1779 joined the 60th Foot in Jamaica.

They received the whole of the Rebel fire from Red Hook, Governors Island, the Battery and from some Guns in the Town. * * * At half past four the ships were past all the Batteries. Number of Shots fired by the Rebels, 196.

The "Asia" was a 64 gun ship of the Line, the latest and most formidable of her class, under command of Captain George Vandeput.

The "Phoenix", a frigate of 44 guns, was under command of Captain (later Admiral) Hyde Parker. The "Rose", a 30 gun frigate, was commanded by Sir James Wallace.

This was in the summer of 1776, and a fleet which even in these days would seem large was lying off the Harbour of New York in preparation for attack. There were 50 warships and 200 transports convoyed by a squadron of battleships headed by the "Cerebus" and the "Centurion". The Coldstream Guards numbered 959, including 39 commissioned officers and 103 non-commissioned officers. There were with the Coldstreams 86 women and 17 children, 1204 in all, pent in 9 small merchant vessels.

American forces defending the Port with the land batteries were stationed at Red Hook, Hoorn's Hook, Paulus Hook, the Grand Battery and Governors Island and along the Hudson as far as Fort Washington, with hulks sunk off Governors Island in the East River.

The Master of the "Rose" describes the effect of our fire as follows:

"The Rebels shot away the starboard foreshroud Foretackle Pendant Forelift, foretopsail clewline Spritsail and main topsail braces with one ten pound shott thr'o the head of the foremast".

It is quite evident that our gunners had the range of the "Rose", but nevertheless the fleet made good its escape and

proceeded to the quieter reaches of the Tappan Zee, only to meet defeat under the shadow of the Palisades about a month later.

In this battle, August 16th, 1776, the *Charlotta* was totally destroyed.

In August Lord Stirling wrote:* "The General bids me say that in our present situation Governor's Island is more strong and better guarded than any other post in the Army."

The obstructions between Governors Island and the Battery mentioned in orders consisted of hulks sunk in the Channel.

Cooperating with the defences at Governors Island, which in those days of short range might be almost considered as outworks, were others in the City itself and it may surprise the reader of today to know of their number in close proximity to Governors Island. General Washington had, very shortly after July 4, 1776, a force of 20,000 men, poorly equipped, armed and disciplined. They manned, among other works, the following: Grand Battery (still called The Battery), 23 guns: Fort George, Bowling Green, 2 guns; McDougall's Battery, just west of Trinity Church, 4 guns; Grenadier's (or Circular) Battery, north of this point, 5 guns; Jersey Battery, near this, 5 guns; Coenties' Battery on the East River, 5 guns; Waterbury's Battery, 7 guns; and at other points near by, all within a small radius, Thompson's Battery, 9 guns; the Independent Battery, on Centre Street

---

*Fort Stirling was situated on Brooklyn Heights, near the present Montagu Street. Lord Stirling, born in New York, was heir to a Scotch title. He married the daughter of Philip Livingston. He was Colonel of the 1st New Jersey Regiment of Militia and after the Battle of Long Island received the commission of Major General from the Continental Congress.

BATTLE OF THE "ROSE" AND "PHOENIX" WITH THE AMERICAN FIRE SHIPS

1776

and breastworks at Peck, Beekman, Burling, Coenties and Old Slips, the Coffee House, Exchange, Broad Street and others, besides Brooklyn Heights, Red Hook, and a line of works from Fort Green at the Wallabout (now New York Navy Yard) to Gowanus Creek. There was also a "barrier" or fortified line across the Island which crossed the Bowery in the line of the present Grand Street. This was begun in 1775 and strengthened by the British during their occupation of the City, 1776-1783.

With this description may be compared a letter from Peter Elting to Capt. Richard Varick under date of 30th July, 1776, in which he says:

> "You would be surprised to see what Number of Empty houses there are in this place Verry few of the inhabitants Remain in town that are not ingaged in the Service. * * * Great preparations are making here With Shiver de freeses and Vessels to stop up the Channel & sundry fire ships preparing two Brigs are Ready, something great will Be attempted soon five or seven Rogallies are already Come down from the Eastward * * * the fleet Remains Verry Quiet But the men of the two menwar up the River have a small brush Once in a While with our Guards long the River."

The reader who needs a translation of some of the terms used in this letter for the information of Captain Varick will find it in the Memoirs of Major General William Heath, who notes therein, on the next day after, August 1st, that thirty British sail have arrived at the Hook and that three or more row-gallies have gone up the Hudson, and further, that in bringing the hulks, cheveux de frise, &c., round from the East River to the Hudson one sloop was sunk between Governors Island and the Grand Battery.

General Putnam arrived in New York on April 4th, 1776, and wrote to the President of Congress:

"After getting the works in such forwardness as will be prudent to leave I propose immediately to take possession of Governor's Island which I think a very important Post." The works in June mounted four 32 and four 18 pdrs.

On April 9th Colonel Silliman of Connecticut wrote to his wife: "Last evening draughts were made from a number of Regiments here, mine among the rest, to the number of 1000 men. With these, and a proper number of officers Gen'l. Putnam at candle lighting embarked on Board of a number of vessels with a large Number of intrenching tools and went directly on * * * Nutten Island where they have been intrenching all night * * * and have got a good Breast work there raised which will cover them from the fire of the Ships."

Major John Lillie in a letter to General Sam Smith of Maryland writes that he, in August, 1776, being then a Lieutenant of Artillery, with 6 men in small boats, unspiked some of the cannon, fired on the ROEBUCK of 44 guns and drove her from her anchorage, then going on the Island with 100 men he carried the guns and stores to New York.

Order of General Washington

Headquarters, New York
June 30th, 1776.

PAROLE: Philadelphia COUNTERSIGN: Holland

26,000 musket cartridges are to be sent to Colonel Prescott on Governors Island with some flints. The Brigadiers are to order a circle marked round the several Redoubts. Small brush may be set up to make the line more distinct. * * *

The Countersign in future is to be delivered by the Adjutant General to the Brigade Majors and Adjutants of Artillery at 6 P. M. * * *

General Heath is to order the House and Barn on Governors Island to be consumed.

K. N.

The following Orders issued at this time show clearly the state of the Garrison and City. (Valentine's Manual)

April 5th, 1776

The Soldiers are strictly enjoined to retire to their barracks and quarters at tattoo beating and remain there until reveille is beat. Necessity obliges, and the General desires, that the inhabitants of the City observe the same rule as no person will be permitted to pass any sentry after this night without countersign.

The inhabitants whose business requires it may know the countersign by applying to any of the Brigade Majors.

Headquarters, New York,
April 8th, 1776.

The General informs the inhabitants that all communication* between the ministerial fleet and the shore should immediately be stopped and the ships should no longer be furnished with provisions. * * * All boats are to sail from Beekman's Slip. * * * It is ordered * * * that none attempt going without pass.

ISRAEL PUTNAM,
Major General Commanding the Army
Commander in Chief of the Forces in New York

*The "Asia" was served by the springs on Governors Island for watering till the arrival of Genl. Putnam at this time.

On July 3rd, 1776, to show he was ready for what was to occur next day, Colonel Prescott reports: "Governors Island is fortified by a citadel and outworks, mounting four 32 pdrs and four 18 pdrs, manned by Prescott's and Nixon's Regts."

K. N.

The *New York Gazette* announces that on "Monday night 1000 Continental troops stationed here went over and took possession of Governor's Island and began to fortify it."

General Putnam lived at this time in No. 1, Broadway, Bowling Green, in a house called the Kennedy House. Since 1643 only three houses have occupied this site. The present one is called the Washington Building on account of the fact that General Washington frequently visited the original Kennedy House on the same site.

Col. Wm. Douglas in a letter to his wife, Northford, Conn., dated N. York Aug'st 31, 1776, says:

"We have evacuated Governor's Island where we have lost some cannon. They fired smartly from Fort Stirling yesterday at our boats passing from Governor's Island."

In thinking of an historical period far removed from our own time one is apt to have in mind a general impression or composite picture of the whole in which unknown details are summoned up by the imagination to form a confused image of the shadowy Past. This is unsatisfactory at best and in order to make more clear to the reader the actual state of affairs at this time in the history of our City and Island, when Putnam and his men came over in all haste at candle lighting to fortify against the British attack, an extract follows from Lamb's History of New York. With its aid one seems to live in the scenes of war preparation it so admirably illuminates. "New York was one of the busiest spots on the Western Continent just now. Men were working

night and day on the forts, troops were coming in from all quarters of the compass in the most picturesque and greatest variety of costume. The old red coats used in the French War had been brought from the garrets and turned to account in Connecticut. In juxtaposition with the tow colored frocks worn by her volunteers appeared every now and then a dingy regimental of scarlet with a tarnished three-cornered laced hat. Some of the Marylanders wore green hunting shirts with leggings to match. Troops came from Delaware in dark blue coats with red facings. Some of the New Jersey riflemen were in short red coats and striped trousers; others in short blue coats, old leather breeches, light blue stockings, shoes with brass buckles and wool hats bound with yellow. The Pennsylvania Regiments were in all the colours of the rainbow—brown coats faced with buff, blue coats faced with red, brown coats faced with white and studded with great pewter buttons, buckskin breeches and black cocked hats with white tape bindings, also blue coats faced with white. The Virginians wore white smock-frocks furbelowed with ruffles at the neck, elbows and wrist, black stocks, hair in queues and round-topped broad-brimmed black hats. A little later the Light Dragoons were uniformed in blue coats faced with red or in brown coats faced with green.

The Washington Guards wore blue coats faced with buff, red waist coats, buckskin breeches, black felt hats bound with white tape and bayonets with belts of white. Hunting shirts, the 'moral aversion of the Red-coat,' with breeches of the same cloth as the shirts gaiter fashion about the legs were seen on every side, and being convenient garments for campaigning were soon adopted by the British themselves. This was the origin of the modern trouser or pantaloon."

Of such composition was the force under General Putnam busy in throwing up the breastworks on Governors Island. We can imagine the feverish haste of the day and night fortification work, the clumsiness of the hunters, the lack of discipline among the farmer boys, the fatigue of the volunteers from the counting-house. We can well believe many brown coats with their great pewter buttons were cast aside when the pick and shovel were taken up and that three-cornered hats and ruffles at the neck, elbows and wrist fared badly in the trenches. These men had coats of many colours, but their hearts were one for union and defence. Our admiration and gratitude must be theirs as their heritage is ours.

We read further in Lamb's interesting account: "The scene was like one vast bee hive. Soldiers and civilians ran hither and thither in the performance of some exacting duty. Aside from the numerous fortifications and batteries in and around New York, on Governor's Island and Long Island, barricades were thrown up in every street leading to the water, chiefly of mahogany logs taken from West India cargoes. City Hall Park was almost entirely enclosed. Broadway was obstructed in front of St. Paul's Chapel, a barrier rose at the head of Vesey Street, another at the head of Barclay, one at the head of Murray Street, and many others—at Centre St., Frankfort and Chatham Streets and an angular defence where the Tribune Building now stands."

Trinity Church was the old Royalist Parish of 1697. The citizens, accustomed as they were and had been for three-quarters of a century to prayers in the Parish Church for the King and Royal Family, demanded however that they should now cease.

The Reverend Charles Inglis, the Rector, was insulted wherever he went in the streets and finally his life was threatened if he did not desist from using the liturgy according to the text. To officiate publicly and abstain from the mention of England's monarch in his supplications would be to violate his oath and the dictates of his conscience. His embarrassment was very great. One Saturday morning a company of 150 soldiers marched into the church with drums beating and pipes playing and bayonets glistening on their loaded guns. The congregation was panic stricken and women fainted.

It was supposed that if the Rector should read the collects for the King and Royal Family he would be shot in the sacred desk. But he went on boldly to the end; omitting no portion of the service, and although there were restless and hostile demonstrations he escaped injury.

In a private letter to Peter Van Schaack, 23d February, 1776, two months before General Putnam began the works on Governors Island, Frederick Rhinelander indicates the feeling of alarm in the City due to the arrival of American troops in force, when he says: "To see the vast number of houses shut up one would think the City almost evacuated. Women and children are scarcely seen in the streets."

In a note of the same period we read: "Friday, Sept. 13, 1776. In the afternoon some Men of War went up the East River; the few cannons left fired on the ships which caused that they fired back from Long Island and Governor's Island, and very smartly."

This was shortly after the Battle of Long Island, August 27, 1776, the "day that though so full of sorrow for the Americans, shed so little glory on British arms." Washington had 20,000 troops; Prescott's and Nixon's Regiments were stationed on Governors Island. Lord Howe sailed

up the Bay and anchored near the Island, whereupon our troops withdrew to the mainland, sustaining only one injury, a soldier wounded as he was embarking, by a ball from the British man-of-war.

Judge Thomas Jones, a staunch Tory,* writes as follows:

"Sept., 1776. The rebels in their hurry upon leaving Long Island left the Garrison upon Nutten Island (which they had strongly fortified) consisting of 2,000 men, 40 pieces of heavy cannon, military stores and provisions in abundance without the least means of quitting the Island. The Royal Army consisted of near 30,000 men * * * yet no steps were taken to make prisoners of the garrison and get possession of the forts, stores, artillery and provisions.

In the evening of the same day (unaccountable as it is) a detachment of the rebel Army went from New York to Nutten Island with a number of boats and carried off the troops, the stores, artillery and provisions. * * *"

Had Lord Howe taken his fleet up the East River on the day of the action upon Long Island and the River been lined with the ships from Governors Island to Hellgate, "not a rebel would have escaped from Long Island. But this was not done, and why it was not done, let the brothers Howe tell."

A more detailed account of this action is found in a contemporary note by a Royalist: "In the evening of the 27th of August the army (British) encamped in front of the enemy's works. On the 28th at night they broke ground 600 yards from a redoubt upon their left and on the 29th at night the Rebels evacuated their intrenchments and Red Hook

* The Honourable Thomas Jones of Fort Neck in Queen's County, Long Island, a graduate of Yale College and one of the Judges of the Supreme Court of the Province of New York.

Note by the late Revd Wm. Jones Seabury, D. D., a grt gdson of Bishop Seabury.

(Brooklyn opposite Governors Island) with the utmost silence and quitted Governors Island the following evening, leaving their cannon and a quantity of stores in the works.

At daybreak on the 30th their flight was discovered. The piquets of the line took possession and those most advanced reached the shore opposite New York as their rear guard was going over and fired some shot among them.

Admiral Howe at this time sent up four ships which anchored about two miles below the Island and kept up a most tremendous fire against the rebel fortifications there."

Cannon balls are frequently dug up on the Island, as in making the foundations for the new Chapel in 1905, in laying the water mains across the parade and in digging trenches for telephone cables. In fact, digging of any considerable amount always discloses old cannon balls which are believed to be, or some of them at least, from this bombardment.

The British forces under General Howe and Admiral Howe seized Governors Island shortly after this and occupied it until the evacuation of New York in 1783.

The Battle of Long Island occurred on August 27th. Washington called a Council of War on September 12th, which decided to evacuate the City. On September 15th the British occupied the City. "Once more," says Jenkins in "The Greatest Street in the World," "the banner of Great Britain flew over the ramparts of the Fort, while the parade was trodden by men in the red coats of the English, the kilts of the Highlanders and the green coats of General Gage's men. * * * They all departed forever on November 25th, 1783, when the American Army of occupation resumed possession of the City and Fort and flung its starry banner to the breeze." Botta, writing of the action of the retreat after the Battle of Long Island, says: "Whoever will attend to all the details of this retreat will easily believe

that no military operation was ever conducted with more ability or prudence." He might have added that arms, ammunition and stores were never taken away from their victorious captors by the defeated with more skill and impudence.

The American forces at this time were not able to hold New York, as the following letter from the highest authority indicates:

8TH SEPTEMBER, 1776.

> That the enemy mean to winter in New York, there can be no doubt; that they can drive us out is equally clear. Nothing seems to remain but to determine the time of their taking possession.
>
> G. WASHINGTON.

Whereupon Congress resolved that the President should inform General Washington it was by no means the sense of Congress in their resolves of the 3rd instance respecting New York that the Army or any part of it should remain in that City a moment longer than he should consider proper.

Governors Island remained in the possession of the British troops, who fortified it heavily, from 1776 until the restoration of peace in 1783.

The following extracts from "Revolutionary Papers" (New York Historical Society) throw light upon the activities of the British during their occupation of Governors Island.

In 1779, Gen'l. Pattison, the English Commandant, wrote to the Lord Townshend that "he is repairing the ruined fortifications and batteries erected by the Rebels on Governors Island. We secured by public appeal the services of 500 citizens, a great many of them merchants and shopkeepers, who with great cheerfulness labored at the fortifications and

would accept no pay. Those who required pay received ten shillings and rations per day."

We have little information regarding the period of occupation by the British. The following letters and orders are of interest and value in throwing light upon this era of the Island's history:

To Admiral Arbuthnot:

Major General Pattison presents his Compliments to Admiral Arbuthnot and is justly sensible of his kind disposition to contribute to the Comfort of the Army and * * * the Sick of the Troops will be removed to Governor's Island to-morrow.

New York, Sept. 1, 1779.

An order of Sept. 29, 1779, directs that by orders of Major General Pattison a "daily allowance of provisions, Rum and Spruce Beer be issued to 300 laborers employed on the King's works on Governors Island and that tents, blankets, camp kettles, fuel and boats be ready at 6 o'clock in the morning at White Hall."

New York, Oct. 4, 1779.

To Major André

Sir:

I am directed by Major Gen'l. Pattison to acquaint you that * * * he has deferred giving orders for removing Lieut. Col. Buskirk's Battalion to Governor's Island till His Excellency the Commander-in-Chief's Pleasure shall be known. * * * As there are 150 of Lowesberg's Regiment returning from sea, * * * the greater part of Buskirk's Battalion might be sent to Governor's Island.

Gen'l. Pattison therefore requests that you will take His Excellency's Commands. I am, etc.

Major André — Step. P. Ayde, A. D. C.

New York, December 2, 1779.

To Captain Mercer,

Sir:—

I am directed by Major Gen'l Pattison to signify to you that it is indispensably necessary that Guard should be on Governor's Island for the protection of the Bastions, etc., the Guns being at present exposed to be spiked every night. He desires that a Guard Room sufficient to contain 20 men may be erected there and that you will inform him when it is ready.

I have, etc.

Capt. Mercer
Com'dg. Eng'r.

S. P. A.
(Step. P. Ayde)

As a state of alarm among the British is disclosed in the foregoing order of 1779, so the dawn of peace is suggested in the following report from General Heath:

Headquarters
Continental Village, Sept. 23rd, 1781.

To Governor Clinton,

Sir:—

I am honoured by yours of the 22nd. * * * An account from Long Island says a 74 gun ship was taken and that three were dismasted. The greatest part of the troops with Governor Clinton are embarked.

THE GOVERNOR JAY PLAN

FOR THE CENTRAL FORT

1795

CARRIED OUT WITH
MODIFICATIONS

All the heavy cannon both of the Grand Battery and of Governor's Island have been taken on board the ships.

W. HEATH,
Major General.

There are few records known to exist during the intervening years relative to Governors Island. The war ceased in 1783 and from the Clinton MSS. the following orders are taken:

AMPHION, OFF NEW YORK,
25th November 1783.

GOVERNOR CLINTON.

SIR:—

I have given orders that all the Buildings now remaining upon Governor's Island shall be left untouched, whenever I am able to leave. I am, sir, your most

Obed't humble servt.
(Admiral) ROB'T. DIGBY

GOVERNOR'S ISLAND,
Dec. 3rd. 1783.
7 A. M.

SIR:—

Having received orders from Rear Admiral Digby to withdraw the Guard together with the whole Naval Hospital from this Island I acquaint your Excellency that at the hour of eleven A. M. this day the Guard together with the Naval Hospital will be withdrawn from the Island. * * *

I am also desired to inform your Excellency that the only property disposed of belonging to Government on Governor's Island are the hulls of two Brigantines hauled up on each side of the wharf.

I shall do myself the honour to inclose for your Excellency's better information a list of the different buildings regularly numbered with the keys to the person you shall think it fit to take charge of them from Lieutenant Graham.

I have the honour to be your Excellency's most obed't and most humble serv't

JAMES DUNCAN,
Capt. in the Navy etc.

To His Excellency
GOVERNOR CLINTON etc. etc.
State of New York.

The descriptive list includes among other buildings, etc., a Captain's and Lieutenant's Barracks and Kitchens, a guard house, a convalescent hospital, a barn, a gardener's house, all of which have long since disappeared.

With the close of the Revolution in 1783 the American command was reestablished on Governors Island and the British works were occupied. That the young Republic was mindful of its dignity is shown by an order from the President through the Secretary of War dated Nov. 18, 1794, stating that the Secretary of War Knox informs the Officer Commanding upon Governors Island that the Minister of the French Republic has represented that the French frigate "Sémillante" had saluted the flag with fifteen guns and that the fort had not replied and that the President of the United States wishes the Commanding Officer immediately to fix a time when he would fire the Federal Salute of Fifteen guns.

On April 19, 1795, Alex. Thompson, Capt. Corps of Artillerists and Engineers respectfully reports to Governor Clinton that the French man-of-war has left the North River and that at this time the fifteen gun salute was duly delivered from the battery which he commands on the Island.

Another bit of correspondence on the subject of Salutes is interesting to compare with our modern telegraph-telephone-quick-order-fixed-ammunition methods.

GOVERNOR'S ISLAND,
Oct. 11, 1794.

To HIS EXCELLENCY.

SIR:

Yesterday morning Admiral Murra sent a Lieutenant to this Island to learn from me as a commanding officer whether it would be proper or whether it had been customary to salute the Flag of the United States at such a distance and what number of guns would be given. In answer to his salute, I informed the Lieutenant that the Admiral lay at such a Distance I thought it Improper to Salute, but should it so happen that the Admiral did Come Up within 1 mile in a S. Direction of this Island according to Your Excellency's orders, I should Return his Salute. But as to Stipulate for the No. of Guns it was out of my power, But that our Natl. Salute was 13 at present.

Agreeable to your Excellency's Orders sometime ago, I shall attend to Returning the Salute should the Admiral Come Up. Your Excellence will please to understand that Admiral Murra lays at the watering place so called here Staten Island.

I am Yours Excellency's
Most Obt. and Humble servt.
CORNS. R. SEDAM,
Captain 1st Sub Legion.

The Legion of the United States was organized March 5, 1792, and comprised Infantry, Dragoons and Artillery. It consisted of four Sub-Legions, each commanded by a Lieut.-Colonel. The 1st Infantry (1784) formed part of the First Sub-Legion. Nov. 1, 1796, the Legion

was disbanded, the Infantry of the 1st, 2nd, 3rd and 4th Sub-Legions becoming respectively the 1st, 2nd, 3rd and 4th Regiments of Infantry. Two companies of Light Dragoons were also formed from The Legion. The uniform of the 1st Sub-Legion was white binding upon their caps, with white plumes and black hair.

The following are of interest in this connection:

Vol. XXI, Wayne MSS., p. 89: From Pittsburg, 13 Sept. 1792, Wayne wrote to H. Knox, Sec'y War, Phila:—

> "Standards, Batt^{n} and Camp Colors are much wanted for parade and manoeuvering."

P. 112, Vol. XXI, Wayne MSS., 21 Sept., 1792, gives letter Sec'y K. to W., page 4 of which—extract:

> "There were four excellent large standards forwarded the last year for the first regt. (Lt. Col. Josiah Harmon), and the second regt. (Maj. David Strong) and for the two regts. of (Pa.) levies. They are now packed up at Fort Washington (Cincinnati).
>
> "With some change of colouring as to denote the Sub Legions, they would answer perfectly for Sub Legionary standards. They were of silk, and were expensive; battalion colours shall be prepared and also camp colours.
>
> "The Legionary Standard, if approved by the President of the United States ought to be the representation of a bald Eagle as large as life, formed of silver. If this idea should not be adopted, something of the flagg kind will be devised."

Vol. XXVIII, p. 76: Ft. Hamilton, 16 Aug., 1793 Wilkinson to Wayne.

> "To Capt. (Howell or Thomas) Lewis (3rd Rifle Batt^{n} 3d Sub Legion) I have committed the Standards of the late 1st and 2d Regiments with orders to perish with his whole detachment, or deliver them in safety to your Excellency's hands."

Orderly Book of 1786–1787

Colonel Henry Burbeck, Artillery, commanded Fort Columbus in 1810 and his orders are quoted in Chapter III. An Orderly Book belonging to him when he was Captain has recently been loaned to the Author for purposes of quotation by the present owner, Captain Chandler Smith, V. C. A., a great-grandson of Colonel Burbeck.

The Orderly Book, dated War Office, 26th December, 1786, begins with the Artillery Uniform as ordered by the Secretary at War, under date of 30th January, 1787.

As worn on Governors Island at that period it was as follows:

Artillery Uniform

Hats cocked, yellow trimmings. Coats Blue, scarlet lapels, cuffs and standing collars, cape to the knee, scarlet lining and yellow buttons. Vests white with short flaps, three buttons on each pocket. Cockades of black leather. Shoulder straps Blue edged with Red on both shoulders. Feathers Black and Red tops.

Epaulettes . . Officers gold. Captains 1 epaulette on the right shoulder and 2 rows of bullion. Sergeants 2 epaulettes of yellow worsted. Corporals 1 Epaulette right shoulder. Swords sabre form, yellow mounted. The Uniform of the Music to be Red faced with Blue.

The sentences in that day as given in this book were severe. At a court martial held May 4th, 1787, of which Captain Savage was President, three soldiers of the Federal Artillery were "tryed" for serious offences and upon conviction were sentenced to receive one hundred lashes each on the naked back and to be drummed off the Island. At another "tryal" the punishment was to wear the log two days and to attend roll call with it.

At another to wear the Log chained to the leg six days. At another a matross* in Captain Savage's Company sentenced to ask pardon of Lieutenant Pierce on the Parade in a very submissive manner and to be Log'd one week and to do the necessary fatigue with it and to attend roll calls. Several entries in this book are dated West Point and Springfield but the references are to men in Captain Burbeck's Company at both Posts. One of these, dated 12th November, 1787, West Point, records the court martial of Rob't Welsh, "a Soldr in the 1st American Regiment." A note on this to the Author from R. C. Ballard Thruston, Esq., President of the Sons of the American Revolution, says: "At that time (1787) there was only one Regiment and I am satisfied that Regiment carried the Flag at Governors Island" (the one in the Chapel).

The Assessment Roll of 1793 gives Nutten Island as valued at £800 and the tax was fixed at £4 7s 4d.

K. N.

On February 28, 1794, the Committee of the House of Congress directed to report on such Harbour forts as required to be put in a proper state of defence made a report in relation to Governors Island stating that the expense of constructing batteries, embrasures and platforms for 24 pieces was $1727.52; a redoubt for embrasures, $810; a magazine, $200; a block house or barracks, $500.

On March 26, 1794, Congress appropriated for fortifications on Governors Island $150,000.

This expenditure was under the direction of George Clinton, Mathew Clarkson, James Watson, Rich'd Varick, Nicholas Fish, Ebenezer Stevens and A. Hammond.

* This term, signifying gunner's assistant in the Artillery service, is now obsolete or historical.

A further sum of $100,000 was appropriated on April 6, 1795, to complete the works on Governors and Ellis' Islands.

In 1797 $30,117 were appropriated for the Fort now known as Fort Jay. Such was the fear of French invasion that the Professors and Students of Columbia College came to the Island and worked with shovels and barrows to complete the work. The Garrison at this time consisted of one Major, one Captain, one Surgeon, two 1st Lieutenants, one cadet, three Sergeants, one corporal, four musicians, five artificers and 34 privates.

The Fort Buildings in 1797

The Works of 1797 on Governors Island were largely erected by citizens of New York.

"The whole body of carpenters and joiners, the body of masons, grocers, school masters, coopers and barbers, attorneys and men connected with the law handle the mattock and shovel the whole day and carry provisions with them."

This quotation from Wansey's Excursion prepare us for the following which is important as disclosing the identity of the Engineer who planned the works:

"The fortifications erected upon Governors Island to defend the entrance to the Harbour are partly of brick and partly of earth, and are in a respectable state of defense. The Works were begun three years ago upon a very good plane by M. Vincent, a French Engineer. $80,000 were granted by Congress to be expended upon them."

K. N.

In 1798 there were built upon Governors Island a Guard House, Hospital, Barracks, a large oven, Officers' quarters, etc.

The *New York Journal*

May 30th, 1790

has the following advertisement which would be considered rather cautious today:

"November 30th, 1790. This day at II there will be a Horse Race on Governor's Island which, if the weather is fine, will give satisfaction to the Public."

K. N.

New York Gazette

April 30th, 1798

"The proving of Guns on Governor's Island is performed under the eye of the brave Captain Barry, Commander of the Frigate *United States.*"

K. N.

In 1799 $30,116 were appropriated for the work; in 1800 $20,124; in 1801 $10,338.

The Secretary of War had reported to Congress in 1794 that one bastion commanding two low batteries had been undertaken but that the works, being only sodded, would not last long. Later, in 1796, January 18, he reported that Governors Island had been fortified with an earthen fort of two bastions partly lined with brick masonry, two air furnaces, a large powder magazine and barracks.

From 1794-1797 Quarantine was located here.

GATE OF CASTLE WILLIAMS

BUILT 1807-1811

The building of Castle Williams, and especially of Fort Jay, which was forty years in construction (1794-1833) and had many periods, is difficult to describe smoothly in connection with other events and the reader's indulgence is asked for such lack of sequence or repetition as he may observe.

In 1801 Fort Jay had a "handsome gateway with a corps de garde drawbridge." In connection with this gateway there is a pretty legend which, though persistent, can-

not be verified as to time or person. The story is that a prisoner who was a stonecutter by trade was detailed to make the fine carving which adorns the gateway. During the progress of the work one day the commanding officer's little daughter stood under the gateway with the stonecutter who was inspecting his work from below. Just then a heavy block of stone or a stone cannon ball fell and would have killed the child, but the prisoner, too late to pull her aside, interposed his own body and saved her life with serious injury to himself. His reward for the gallant act was pardon. If the story cannot be proved, neither can it

be disproved, and it has been told long enough to entitle it to a respectful hearing and a willing acceptance.*

In the centre of the Fort Jay of 1801 was a square blockhouse of timber two stories high, but probably not cannon-proof, with a well under it. This is probably the block house for which Congress appropriated $500 in 1794. As for the well, as late as 1905 the remains of the superstructure of the pump remained in situ, requiring everyone who crossed the quadrangle to make a détour. No further improvements were made till 1806, when Fort Jay was demolished, except the walled counterscarp, the gate, sally port, magazine and two barracks. All the rest of the works was removed to allow of more durable material to be used in construction.

On the site of old Fort Jay was erected a new Fort with the name changed to Fort Columbus, which name was retained until 1904 when by orders of the War Department it was re-named Fort Jay. The new fortification consisted of an enclosed pentagonal work with four bastions of masonry to hold 100 guns. On three of its sides it was built the same as Fort Jay the elder with the addition of 14 feet on each side; and on the north wall of a ravelin with two retired casemated flanks. Guns to command the (dry) moat were located here. Their casemates are now bricked up. The minutes of the Military and Philosophical

* This legend has been elaborated into a pretty tale by John J. Becket, published in 1888. The author makes the prisoner a Tory spy named George Horton and concludes the story with his marriage, not to the Commanding Officer's daughter, as might have been expected by the romantic, but to some one in King's County, where, he says, some of his great grandchildren are still residing. The Commanding Officer's daughter also marries and brings her children to see the sally port carving which played so important a part in her life.

Society of West Point (1808) state that two detached batteries were built about this period, one mounting four 18 pdrs. and one 8 in. French mortar, with platforms for four others; and the other, ten pieces, 18 and 24 pdrs. The parapet had 52 embrasures and it would take 1,000 men to man the parapet. This work was completed in 1809.

Castle Williams was begun in 1807 and completed in 1811, as the crumbling dates in the stone over the gateway set forth. It was designed and built by Lieut.-Colonel Jonathan Williams, Engineer Corps. The material of the castle is Newark red sandstone. It rests on a bed of rock at the extreme northwesterly point of the Island. In form it is 3/5 of a circle, 200 feet in diameter. The walls are 40 feet in height, casemated with bomb-proof arches for 2 tiers of guns. Guns were also mounted upon the top, to which access was had by two interior stone turret staircases. The walls are 8 feet thick on the lower tier and seven feet on the upper tier. It had on each side of the gate on the inside a stone building. One of these was used for a power magazine and one for solitary confinement at some period. There was a walk for sentry duty in the thickness of the wall over the main gate and a picturesque stone sentry box at the angle.

The stone buildings referred to here were taken down (1912-13) and the material was used for the building of a two-story structure on the same site. The lower story contains a guard house and the upper story rooms for court martial and other purposes. It is an admirable re-arrangement, giving at once much needed facilities for garrison administration and increasing the military appearance of the interior court of the Castle.

For many years Castle Williams has been used as a military prison. During the Civil War it is said 1500 prisoners

were confined in the Castle at one time. All the tiers were used for the prisoners and a large cooking house was erected in the middle of the court. A stockade was built in front of the gate and strongly guarded. The reveille gun and saluting battery were mounted on the top of the Castle and a fog bell and siren were a part of its equipment.

A passageway connected the Castle with the main fort in the middle of the Island. Its remains are clearly visible to-day. What is left of the way extends from the Fort to the Post Hospital. The rest of its was destroyed evidently to make way for modern constructions on the northern edge of the Island, although it may have led to one of the detached batteries of 1808. A large tree has grown up in this passage.

The question as to the name of the Castle frequently arising, it may be of interest to quote the order on the subject:

1ST INDORSEMENT
1111709

WAR DEPARTMENT,

THE MILITARY SECRETARY'S OFFICE,

WASHINGTON, March 20, 1906.

In a letter dated New York, November 27, 1810, addressed to the Secretary of War, Colonel Jonathan Williams of the Corps of Engineers says: "I take the earliest opportunity of expressing my gratitude for the high honour conferred upon me by adding my name to the Castle I erected on the west point of Governors Island in this harbor."

Accompanying the letter referred to above is a copy of an order dated Fort Columbus, 24 November, 1810, issued by Colonel Henry Burbeck, commanding Harbor New York, which directs that "In future the stone tower

on this Island (by the approbation of the Secretary of War) will bear the name of Castle Williams, in honor of the commandant of the United States Corps of Engineers who designed and erected it."

E. F. LADD,
Military Secretary.

The earliest designation of the Castle seems to have been "The Tower," as in the order above quoted and also in the following, issued a year later:

Orders: FORT COLUMBUS
7th Decr, 1811.

* * * * * *

The practice of landing and leaving boats at the Tower is improper. In addition to violation of orders, it gives a facility to desertion: boats therefore of any description are prohibited landing at or near Castle Williams.

* * * * * *

By order of COL. BURBECK.

C. VAN DEVENTER,
Lieut. and Acting Adjutant.

The S. W. Battery, built at the lower end of Manhattan by Colonel Jonathan Williams, was called Castle Clinton after May, 1812, and in 1823 its name was changed to Castle Garden.* The North Battery was thrown up at the foot of Hubert Street, and Fort Gansevort at the foot of Gansevort Street, while to the south were Forts Richmond, Tompkins, Hudson and Diamond. These four forts mounted about 500 guns.

* After years of use as a Concert hall and Immigrant Station it became, and now is, the Municipal Aquarium.

Other early military defences near Governors Island were Half Moon batteries at Coenties Slip and at the water gate of Wall Street, now occupied by the Q. M. Dept. pier.

There were also defences in those days along Wall Street and a curtain at the land gate, where Trinity Church was built in 1697. These fortifications were mounted with the miniature guns of the period, known as demi-culverins, sakers and minions.

CHAPTER III.

Period of the War of 1812

The "Second War of American Independence" found us with an army of 10,000 men, maximum limit, composed of 46 regiments of infantry, 4 rifle regiments, an artillery corps, a regiment of light artillery and of dragoons and an engineer department. It is interesting to notice that the Infantry regiments were to be recruited each from the State or district assigned. The districts were numbered, however, not named. The farthest west were the "territories of Indiana, Michigan, Illinois and Missouri." The district in which Governors Island was situated was designated as "New York from the sea to the Highlands of New Jersey except that part of the state which furnishes the 1st division of Militia."

From an old Garrison Order book of 1810-11 are taken the few extracts following, some of which may be considered appropriate to a chapter on the War of 1812 as disclosing preparations for the War. Others are interesting as reminding us of the fact that human nature and Garrison conditions present the same difficulties in one century as in another. Colonel Burbeck, who assumed command of all the troops in New York Harbour in 1810, shows an earnest desire in his orders to preserve order and to promote discipline in every way.

This book of orders is almost pathetic in its simplicity. It consists of a number of sheets of paper, yellow-brown with age, tied together with red tape of the pattern used today, though faded to a lighter shade. The penmanship is uniformly excellent and abounds in the graceful flourishes characteristic of the period.

They are all signed Justus, Post Adjt, except one signed by Lt Van De Venter, Actg Adjt and one of 1812 by Amos Stoddard, Majr Comdg.

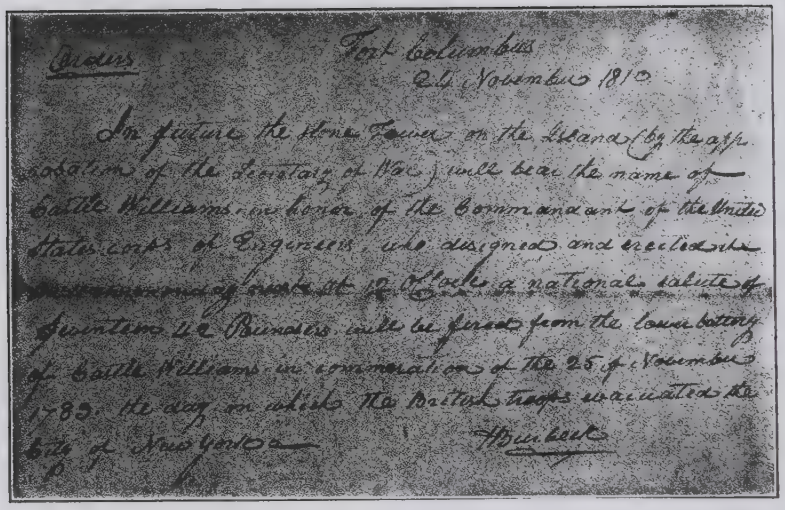
Colonel Burbeck had served in General Knox's Regiment, Continental Artillery and other Regiments from 1775 to 1789, and in the Artillery and Engineers to 1798. Lieut. Christopher Van De Venter entered the U. S. Military Academy from New York in 1808, and Major Stoddard, Major 1st Artillery March, 1812, died in 1813 of wounds received at the siege of Fort Meigs, Ohio.

We learn from the pages of this book that Colonel Burbeck assumed command of all the troops in the Harbour of New York on the 17th August, 1810, and issued, among other orders from Fort Columbus, several showing the activity of fortification construction work. In the first Garrison order issued, 26th August, 1810, occurs the following: * * *

"All's Well" will be called out every quarter of an hour from Tattoo till day light, beginning at No. 1 at guard house. All the other sentinels will observe to answer the call in rotation, * * * in doing which they will observe to turn their faces towards the guard house that they may be the more distinctly heard by the Sergt. or Corporal of the guard who will pay particular attention that it be repeated all around."

This order, dated Fort Columbus, is signed "Justus Post Adjt."

Another order of the same month forbids all officers, non-commissioned officers, soldiers, citizens and all other persons of every description from getting upon the parapet, and also directs the Adjutant to sign the returns for the extra Liquor served the fatigue men employed upon the public works. On Sept. 3d it was ordered that only those prisoners confined in the guard house who had been sentenced to hard



Orders

Fort Columbus
24 November 1810

In future the Stone Tower on the Island (by the approbation of the Secretary of War) will bear the name of Castle Williams in honor of the Commandant of the United States corps of Engineers, who designed and erected it [illegible] day next at 12 O'clock a national salute of Seventeen 42 Pounders will be fired from the lower battery of Castle Williams in commemoration of the 25 of November 1783 the day on which the British troops evacuated the City of New York

H Burbeck

FROM ORIGINAL ORDER IN POSSESSION OF

CAPTAIN CHANDLER SMITH, MEMBER V. C. ARTILLERY

GT. GRANDSON OF COLONEL BURBECK

labour would be indulged in the privilege of their ration of liquor, but that rations retained would be left in store and the amount thereof appropriated to furnish articles of nourishment for the sick of the Garrison. An order of 1811 forbids the landing of rum, brandy, gin, spirits, cordial or ardent spirits of any kind except for the use of the officers of the Garrison and the ration liquor furnished by the Contractor. Another states that "as the smoaking pipes or segars in the open air is both dangerous and indecorous," it is strictly forbidden (except in quarters) at any post in the Harbour.

Still another one, regretting that "some of the soldiers of this Garrison had so far abandoned the strict principles of honour as to bear the stigma of a black eye or a bruised face," states that those thus disqualified will not be permitted to appear on parade or to mount their guard, but will be obliged to make up all omitted tours of guard upon the cessation of such disqualification. The commanding officers of Garrisons and Companies are ordered (August 5, 1811) never to suffer more than two men to be absent in one day on pass or furlough.

On a military map of the Island made in 1857 cowsheds are shown, but an order of this period dated 4th October, 1810, by Colonel Burbeck directs that "Swine being considered a nuisance to a Garrison and improper animals to range or be harbored, after those which now belong here shall have been disposed of, none will be suffered to be landed or kept upon the Island.*

The extracts from this Garrison order book will close with one upon a more serious subject.

* * * * * * *

---

* v. page 22.

Garrison Orders. FORT COLUMBUS,
23d Novr., 1810.

The sixteen gun Battery being now completed it will be appropriated to the particular use of firing salutes and the old Guard will hereafter be considered the party to perform that duty * * * under the immediate direction of Sergt Campbell. No one except the non-commissioned officers will go into the Magazine and those will be careful when they enter it to leave their shoes without the door.

Of the period of 1812 on Governors Island we learn many interesting details through the courtesy of (the late) Brig. Genl. T. F. Rodenbough, who has allowed the author to quote from the original MSS. Garrison order book of 1814-15. This book formerly the property of General Harvey Brown, was presented to the Military Service Institution by Miss Emily Brown. No better idea of the social manners and military usages of that day could be given than by a few of the quotations from this voluminous official record, which the author has the pleasure of doing. These orders are written in a clear, beautiful hand, with a quill pen, and show a careful style of literary composition sadly lacking in these days of typewriting haste.

It may be of interest in this connection to quote the Regulation concerning stationery for the Army issued (May 2, 1814) at this time:

* * * * * * *

To a Major General as much stationery as necessary for the discharge of his public duties. To other General officers 24 quires of paper per annum.

To a Major 6 quires of paper and 1 blank book per annum. For the use of every other commanding officer 2 quires per annum and a proportion of other stationery at the rate of 50 quills as many wafers and a paper of ink powder to each 6 quires.

The orders include a large number of court martial cases with charges of desertion, absence without leave and disobedience of orders. The sentences on the whole appear lenient, the various courts evidently being actuated by a desire to temper justice with mercy. Others are of necessity severe, as became a state of war.

A few examples are given, as throwing light on the practices of the day:

Garrison Orders. FORT COLUMBUS,
May 10, 1814.

* * * * * *

At a Garrison Court Martial whereof Lieut. Bailey was President, convened on the 9th inst., was tried the following offender, . . ., a private in Captn Swett's Company, charged with neglect of duty in leaving his post, stealing whiskey and getting two of his guard drunk while on post on the morning of the 2d May, 1814, to which charge the prisoner pleaded not guilty. The court found the prisoner guilty of the charge and sentenced him to be confined four days in the Black Hole and to be drummed off the Island.

The same court found . . . a private in Captn Humphrey's Company guilty of suffering a patroling party to pass into the South Battery without demanding the countersign, being himself a sentry at the gate, and of making use of abusive language to the Sergeant of the Guard, and sentenced him to be confined three days in the Black Hole on bread and water and to have his whiskey stopped 30 days.

* * * * * *

Apropos of the stoppage of whiskey imposed in this and other sentences, it may be mentioned that on Dec. 8, 1830, the issue of whiskey was by G. O. commutated for cash and on Nov. 5, 1832, this money allowance for whiskey was converted into a coffee or ration allowance.

* * * * * * *

The Black Hole referred to in the orders of 1814 is believed from indirect references in other parts of this order book to have been in the building on the hill, N. E. part of the Island. An order of Jan. 8, 1915, orders the officer of Police to have the window of the Black Hole stopped up and well secured that Private . . . may begin his 10 days' solitary confinement therein.

A sentence which would be considered to day "unusual," if not "cruel," is seen in the following order:

Garrison Orders. FORT COLUMBUS,
Aug. 13, 1814.

* * * * * *

A Garrison Court Martial will convene this morning at 10 o'clock A. M. for the trial of such prisoners as may be brought before it. Capt Bennete will preside. The court being duly sworn in the presence of the Prisoners proceeded to the trial of . . ., a private in Captn Swett's Company of Artillery. Charge, theft; spcfn., stealing a watch from Private Bernard. Plea, guilty. The court sentenced him to be drummed once up and down the Parade with the rogues' march, with his coat turned and the word THIEF written thereon in large letters: further, that he stand within view of the evening parade each day for one week with his coat in the same manner, except when on guard duty, and to have his whiskey stopped for one month.

Another order of this character is noted under date of Jan. 19, 1815, according to which Corporal . . . is to be

"reduced to the ranks at guard mounting when his knot will be taken from his shoulder on parade in front of the Battalion;" and Mary * * * of Captain Watson's Company was convicted of conveying whiskey to a Sentinel on post, whereupon the court sentenced her "to be drummed off the Island immediately after guard mounting and never to be suffered to return."

Another order of the same period orders that Corporal * * * shall have his knot cut from his shoulders by the smallest drummer in the Battalion.

An Execution Order follows:

* * * * * * *

Garrison Orders: FT. COLUMBUS,
July 7, 1814.

The Troops on Governor's Island will parade tomorrow morning at half past 11 o'clock on the Grand Parade for the purpose of witnessing the execution of the prisoner sentenced by a Gen'l order of the 2d inst. to be shot to death. The Troops will form three sides of a square, the Artillery will form the right: left flank the Infty; the rear, the execution party consisting of a Sergeant and 12 privates which will parade at half past 11 o'clock, and be placed under the command of Lieut. Farley, Provost Marshal.

The guards of the advanced posts will leave their entries at their respective posts and will repair to the Parade at half past 11 o'clock, those under charge of the Provost Marshal will join the execution party for the purpose of escorting the Prisoner to the place of execution. The execution party in Divisions preceded by the music with the Provost Marshal at their head will march in front of the Prisoner, the music playing the Dead* March: the guards formed in divisions will

* The dirge played at the military executions of this period was "Roslyn Castle," with muffled drums.

march in rear of the Prisoner. The procession will enter the Square from the rear, face ten paces from the coffin placed in the center upon which the Prisoner kneels. By a signal from the Provost Marshal the music ceases, the signal to fire is then given to the execution party.

By order of
M. SWETT, Com'g.

The following note in the *Museum* shows the splendid patriotism of old New Yorkers in the Second War of American Independence to be quite equal to that of 1797.

Local Weekly Museum

August 13th, 1814.

"No marriage in the City during last week, the Citizens probably too busy digging fortifications. * * *
Next week, one marriage."

K. N.

A pleasing incident of pax inter bella is discovered in an Artillery order of Jan. 1, 1815, when Mars unbends for the moment and in the presence of the ladies of the "Stocking, Hood and Mockason Society" removes his helmet and becomes amenable to the softening influence of woman's sympathy. The courtesies of the day are well illustrated in the charming reply of the gallant commanding officer.

Artillery orders. FORT COLUMBUS,
Jan. 1, 1815.

* * * * * *

Lieut. Col. House has received the following communication from the ladies of the "Stocking, Hood and Mockason Society of New York," accompanied with 46

Hoods and 46 prs. of mittens to be presented to the Soldiers and Sentinels on duty at the several Artillery posts under his command:

NEW YORK, Dec. 30, 1814.

"SIR:

(*After reciting the action of the Society*)

The Society regrets that the present state of their funds does not enable them to do more for those whose claims are strengthened by every consideration of Patriotism and Gratitude.

By order of the Board of Managers.

COL. HOUSE. N. D. S. BRADISH, Sec.

"This Humane and pleasing attention to the wants and privations of the Soldier from a Body of the most respectable Ladies of New York cannot fail to excite in the minds of every individual the most grateful sensation, and to animate in his bosom a peculiar ardour and zeal in the performance of his duty. I am honored, madam, with your letter of the 30th ult. with 46 Hoods and 46 prs. of mittens. I beg leave, madam, to assure you that this flattering attention to the wants and privations of the Soldier from so respectable a Body of Ladies cannot fail to animate every bosom with a degree of Chivalrick ardour when it is recollected that the service in which they are engaged is the defence of the City of their amiable and virtuous patronesses. Accept, madam, for yourself and the Society the assurances of respect with which I have the honour to be,

Yr. most obt. Servt.

JAS. HOUSE,
Lieut. Col. Arty.

A few extracts typical of the rest follow from the Garrison Order Book:

Garrison Orders. FORT COLUMBUS,
July 15th, 1815.

* * * * * *

Parole—Europe.
C. Sign—American.

Officer for the day—Capt. Howell.
Officer for the guard—Lieut. Berier.

The Parole and Countersign will in future be communicated to the officers of the Guard Mounting conformable to an antient practice.

Garrison Orders. FORT COLUMBUS,
Aug. 8, 1815.

* * * * * *

Parole—Galatin.
Csign—Bayard.

Officer for the day tomorrow—Lieut. Davis.
General's Guard from Capt. Richard's Company.

Corporal Snarts, privates Mandaville, Plunkett and Bond of Major Hall's Company, and Texton, Holt and Spencer of Captain Howell's Company are detailed for Col. House's boat, and to report on daily duty until further orders.

By Order,
CHAS. ANTHONY,
Adjt.

Garrison Orders. FORT COLUMBUS,
9th Sept. 1815.

* * * * * *

For the preservation and better regulation of the boats belonging to the Island, those for use are appointed as follows: The boats formerly in the use of Lt. Col. House, Major Hall and Adjutant Anthony and the yel-

NEW YORK IN 1816

FROM N. W. BASTION, FORT COLUMBUS

low oared barge are assigned to the use of the Corps or Artillery at this post, to be turned over to and distributed by Lieut. Col. House. For the use of the Infantry are assigned the Green six-oared barge, the whale boat and the seven-oared barges which are to be turned over to and distributed by Lt. Col. Swetting. The 4-oared Green boat is reserved for the Gen. Hospital. No. 12-oared barge known by the name of Genls. Barge and the 6-oared Green boat are reserved for the use of the Commandant. No interference is to be made by either Corps with the boats assigned to the other. * * *

Another Order relating to transportation is extracted as follows:

Garrison Orders. FT. COLUMBUS,
May 6, 1815.

* * * * * *

The licensed ferry Boats will be governed by the following Regulations: Neither shore to be left destitute of a ferry Boat for more than twenty minutes between the rising and setting of the Sun. * * * Where one Boat starts from one shore, leaving no Boat there, another Boat starts at the same moment from the opposite shore, whether with or without a passenger. * * *

JAS. HOUSE,
Lt. Col. Artillery.
Comdg.

Orders for Sept. 15, 1815, show the retention of the old English name for Mess call.

SEPT. 15, 1815.

* * * * * *

Parole—Wolf.
Csign—Montgomery.

Troop will be beat at 8 A. M.
Roast beef at half past 12.

The War of 1812 followed shortly upon the building of the Castle. Governor Daniel D. Tompkins reports as follows:

NEW YORK, Jan. 19, 1810.

> Fort Columbus on Governor's Island is finished and capable of mounting 104 guns, of which 50 are already on the parapets. This is a regular erected work of masonry with a ditch, counterscarp, covert way and glacis capable of resisting a long siege.
>
> Two tiers and platforms in the Castle are finished, each capable of receiving 26 guns. Eleven French 36 pdrs. are already mounted. The whole armament of the Castle when completed may be stated as 100 guns, including the terrace on the top.

The following Report is valuable as referring to the fort on Buttermilk Channel built in 1812.

NEW YORK, March 15, 1813.

> Fort Columbus, Castle Williams, and a fort to guard the pass at Buttermilk Channel, all upon Governor's Island, are completed and equipped with everything needful for action. * * * There is an abundant supply of cannon balls on Governor's Island, 27,000 blank cannon cartridges, six travelling forges and a number of grates for heating shot.

At this time considerable alarm was felt by the inhabitants of the City at a report that the troops stationed on Governors Island had been ordered to the Northern frontier.

The "National Advocate" in its issue of August 30th, 1812, allayed the natural fears of the people in saying: "We are authorized to state that no troops stationed on Governor's Island have proceeded or are ordered to proceed to the North. The rumour that such an order is to be given is false and groundless."

Apropos of the importance of troops in the Harbour of New York, not only in popular feeling but also in the judgment of the War Department, a brief extract may be quoted from the autobiography of Major Joseph Delafield, 46th U. S. Infantry (Lieut.-Colonel Wm. S. Tallmadge commanding), who was commissioned April 15, 1814:

"The term of service being about to expire and Majr Tallmadge & myself being desirous to remain in the Army and to seek some more active service concerted a plan to form a new regiment, to select our officers from the Volunteer regiment and upon the strength of our recruits and the experience of our officers to ask for their commission. These arrangements being made Majr Tallmadge and myself proceeded to Washington and presented our scheme to the Secretary of War (Genl. Armstrong). At this time an Act of Congress authorized the addition of five regiments to the line of the Army. We were given one of the new regiments, Major Tallmadge to be Lieut. Col: Captains Par Lee and myself Majors and the Company officers all in compliance with our scheme of selection and commissions were given accordingly. We began to recruit with activity and soon had between two & three hundred men; and as the most of us had been confined to the harbor defense and were desirous of more active service we established our headquarters at Pokeepsie, which district was beyond the command of the officer commanding in N. York. Being in charge of the recruiting services my orders were to prepare the men as rapidly as possible to march North to join the Army on the Canada frontier. Our recruiting district embraced the State of New York. The enemy however continued to threaten attacks along the coast, and the alarm for the safety of the city was so great that all the available forces were collected in the harbor and orders were obtained from Washington to bring our detachment to the harbor. We joined the garrison on Governor's Island and there remained until the close of the War."

In the Summer of 1814 there were over 1000 officers and men in the Garrison and great activity was displayed in preparation for actual war, as the following order indicates:

Garrison Orders. FORT COLUMBUS,
Aug. 28, 1814.

* * * * * *

The Artillery and Infantry will be drilled at the Battery on Governors' Island every Monday, Wednesday, and Friday from 5 to 6:30 A. M. commencing at Fort Columbus, taking the guns in course through all the batteries. The commanding officers of companies will cause their companies to be drilled with muskets every Tuesday, Thursday and Saturday at the same hours. All officers are punctually to attend drills.

Sgt. Dillahunty will drill the non-commissioned officers of Artillery from 9:30 to 11 until further orders.

At the sound of the alarm by the bugle the troops will turn out on their company parade. The Infantry will be conducted by their Senior officers to the covert way of the ditch of Fort Columbus as its proper alarm post, and the Artillery will be conducted by companies to their batteries. The conductor of Artillery aided by the Q. M. Sergeant and Powder Monkeys will furnish implements and ammunition and arrange them at the batteries.

By order,
CHAS. ANTHONY,
Adjutant Corps Artillery.

The Island served a valuable purpose during this war as a basis for recruits and school of instruction. Colonel Burbeck according to orders issued in June instructed in Artillery exercises the Pennsylvania Detachment under command of Captain Connely, the New York Detachment under Captain Sproul, and Captain Ogden's Company of Artillery of the Jersey Line, while Lieut. Colonel David Brearly forwarded to Fort Columbus all the recruits of the Pennsylvania and Jersey Lines from the Trenton Depot.

Some details of pay and equipment prevailing at this period are quoted as a basis of comparison with the conditions a century later. The extracts are from Regulations in force May 2d, 1814:

PAY IN 1814.

	PAY PER MONTH	FORAGE NO. OF HORSES	RATIONS PER DAY
Major-General	$200	7	15
Brigadier-General	104	5	12
Brigade Chaplain	50	2	4
Professor of Math. Eng. Corps	50	3	4
Apothecary General	1,800 per annum.		
Commissary General	3,000 per annum.		
Cadet	16		
Colonel (ex. of Cavalry)	75	4	6
1st Lieut. (ex. of Cavalry)	30	0	3
(Forage supplied for Lieut. Artillery and Light Dragoons.)			
Corporal	$10		
Private, bombardier, sapper and miner	8		

(Women in proportion of 1 to every 17 men a ration in kind.)

Private waiters—Major-General 4
Colonel 2
and others in proportion.

CLOTHING 100 YEARS AGO FOR INFANTRY.

REGULATIONS OF 1814.

Coat	$6.07
Cap	2.18
Frock	1.57½
Shirts (4 at $1.30)	5.20
Stockings	54
Socks	10
Shoes	1.05
Stock	12
Cockade and eagle	8½
Pompon	25

While the pay and clothing of 1814 were more satisfactory to the troops than during the Revolutionary Period, the thousand officers and men stationed on Governors Island in the summer of 1814 undoubtedly suffered many discomforts. The Castle had been completed, however, just before the outbreak of the War.

Inasmuch as this is an important building, always in evidence but really little known, the author quotes at some length from Guernsey's technical description of Castle Williams in his "New York in the War of 1812," which states that the lower tier had 27 French 35 pdrs. and the second tier, 39-20 pdrs. The terrace over the bomb proof, he tells us, formed a barbette battery upon which 45 columbiads carrying 50 pd. balls could be placed.

The walls are about 40 feet high, of Newark red sandstone, hammered, and consist of 13 arches of 30 ft. span, 2 ft. thick and 24 long. The cross walls are 7 ft. thick between the arches and 12 ft. at the termination of the segment.

The guns are mounted in such manner that the centre of motion is immediately under the muzzle of the gun, so that, although the angle of fire is 54°, the mouth of the gun occupies always the same place, which permits the throat of the embrasure to be so small that a shot could not pass between the gun and its side and the line of fire cross at 20 feet distance.

The interior of the Castle is open to the sky and the apertures for smoke to escape amounts to 144 square feet in the rear. The walls are 8 feet thick on the ground tier and 7 feet on the next tier and in the mass of the wall arches are turned over each pair of embrasures, so that if it were possible to batter or break into the lower tier, the upper one would rest upon these arches and exhibit the appearance of a bridge composed of very solid tiers. The outside cut of

CHAPEL OF SAINT CORNELIUS THE CENTURION

1847

THE VETERAN CORPS OF ARTILLERY

CHURCH PARADE A CENTURY LATER

the wall was laid in Flemish bond and each stone dovetailed in such a manner that no one could be dislocated without first being broken to pieces. Over each embrasure is a flat arch of remarkable strength. It also contains 2 stone magazines for 200 barrels of powder and within the walls is an inexhaustible well of finest water from which all the shipping might be watered with ease.

Colonel Williams resigned his commission July 31, 1812, on account of dissatisfaction felt and expressed by the Artillery at an Engineer officer's being assigned to command the Castle. Major Joseph A. Swift relieved Colonel Williams as Colonel and Chief Engineer, with headquarters in New York.

The Hon. Saml. Mitchell pays a deserved tribute to Colonel Williams in his letter of October 9th, 1808, written during the construction of the Castle, as follows: "The Chief Engineer who planned the general fortifications of New York and who actually superintended their construction is Colonel J. Williams, the learned and ingenious director of the American Military Academy at West Point and President of the American Philosophical Society. The high professional talents displayed by this gentleman in projecting the works have been very ably seconded in carrying them into operation.

At Governor's Island Fort Columbus is now finished. It consists of 4 bastions, 3 curtains and an attached casemated ravelin with two retired flanks, the whole capable of mounting 96 guns and might without inconvenience bring one-half its face at one instant against any passing ship, while it completely commands the East River.

It is a work composed of a walled rampart 8 feet thick at its base, diminishing by its slope to 6 feet at the line of the cordon with counter forts of five feet in depth at the distance

of 13 feet from each other, surmounted by a solid brick parapet of 10 feet in thickness. The ditch is about 40 feet wide, with a walled counterscarp, a walled covert way and a sodded glacis extending to the water edge.

At Bedlow's Island a mortar battery commands all the channel. This battery is on the level of the ditch of a Star fort in its rear which not only commands it but commands and protects Ellis Island.

The old wooden parapet is taken down at Ellis Island and a platform for a gun battery is completed. Under charge of Colonel Williams a Castle at the Battery is being built similar to that on Governor's Island. The North Battery, foot of Hubert Street, is a circular battery of 20 guns in one tier which will cross fire with the S. W. Battery.

In Fort Columbus there are actually in place 60 cannon, in Castle Williams 52, in S. W. Battery (Castle Clinton) 28, at Bedlow's Island 24, at North Battery 16, Ellis Island 14, Arsenal near Custom House 34.

Adding for the uncompleted third tier of Castle Williams, Governors Island, 26, and for the bomb battery at Ellis Island 4 mortars, we have a total of 258 pieces.

The estimated complement to man these guns is as follows:

On Governor's Island: Fort Columbus 780 men, Castle Williams 1014; Bedlow's Island 312, Ellis Island 182, S. W. Battery 364, North Battery 208, Arsenal 442, making a total requirement of 2,302 men.

The larger estimate for Castle Williams is based upon the additional 26 guns in the third tier."

The above quoted letter of the Hon. Saml. Mitchell was written in 1808. During the continuance of the War of 1812-15, references to which are to be found in this Chapter, occurred a practical test of the efficiency of the guns of

Castle Williams in a target practice for the benefit of the Artillery Militia.

The one of which we have an account took place on the 14th August, 1812. The target was an old hulk anchored in the stream about 1,000 yards from shore, equidistant from Castle Williams and the Fort at the Battery. General Morton's Brigade at the Battery Parade opened fire with 6, 9, 12 and 18 pdrs.

The Veteran Corps of Artillery commanded by Captain Delamater fired from a long nine, which repeatedly raked the hull of the target.*

Several heavy shot from the guns in Castle Williams also hulled the target. After the firing had continued two hours the hulk was perceived to be on fire. This was caused by the hot shot fired by Colonel Curtenius' Regiment, which were heated in a travelling forge attached to the Brigade. The result of the firing was as follows:

	NO. OF SHOTS	EFFECTIVE	MISSED
Castle Williams	30	27	3
Castle Clinton	40	36	4
The Artillery V. C. A. and others	314	254	60
	384	317	67

The military activity of the regular forces on Governor's Island at this period was reflected in the atmosphere of expectation that prevailed throughout the City. In every walk of life there was but one theme of conversation, and the various armed organizations, whether shooting long nines

*The Veteran Corps of Artillery nearly a century after this event instituted relations with Governors Island of a more peaceful character. (v. p. 198).

or smoking churchwardens, were *parati ad bellum.* Even the fashionable restaurants of the day were redolent of war, as we judge from the description of the Shakespeare Tavern, which was one of a number of similar establishments.

The Shakespeare Tavern was situated at the southwest corner of Fulton and Nassau Streets. It was here that the Veteran Artillery Corps had their holiday dinners, although it also dined, as it does to this day, at Fraunces' Tavern, on occasions of ceremony.

The Shakespeare was kept by one Hodgkinson and it was adorned in 1815 by a great sign of Columbia and Britannia with joined hands and an olive branch and the words, "Forgive and Forget."

Over the Eagle were draped the American colours and over the Lion was the shield of Great Britain. Over all were the names of our Commissioners, Adams, Bogart, Gallatin, Clay and Russell, and the word "Peace," with intertwined flags.

The decorations thus described were added to the other attractions of the Tavern at the establishment of peace, which was officially announced in the following orders:

General Orders. ADJT. GEN. OFFICE,
3D MILITARY DISTRICT, NEW YORK.
Feb. 6th, 1815.

* * * * * *

A Martial Salute will be fired tomorrow from Governor's Island in honor of the *Glorious Victory* obtained over the enemy at New Orleans on the 8th January by the troops under Major Gen. Jackson.

This order was followed by a Gen. order, Feb. 20, reciting that a Treaty of Peace had been signed between the United

States and Great Britain at Washington on Feb. 17th, and ordering a Martial Salute to be fired at noon on Feb. 21st from Governor's Island and all posts from Sandy Hook to the forts at Harlem, the Salutes to be followed by a "Feu de joie" and an "Extra Ration of Liquor to be offered to the troops to drink the glorious termination of an honorable War." It was also ordered that Feb. 25th should be "passed by the Troops of this Garrison in festivity and rejoicing and in the evening an illumination of the officers' Quarters and Barracks and Guard House to begin at dusk and to continue till 9 o'clock. At half after 7 o'clock in the evening "18 rockets will be discharged from the castle under the direction of the Artillery Quarter Master."

That War was over and Peace assured may be gathered from the following Orders relative to details generally neglected under war conditions:

Artillery Orders. FORT COLUMBUS,
14 March, 1815.

A long standing Genl. Order regulating the cut of Hair & Whiskers has for some time past been too little attended to and there appear in the ranks as many fashions with regard to this part of the dress as there are kinds of men. There may be some excuse for these irregularities in new-raised Regts., but it ought to be expected that so old and respectable a corps of the Army as the Artillery would set the example of neatness. * * *

At the next weekly inspection every non-Com officer and Soldier will appear with his whiskers trimmed off in a line from the tip of the ear to the bottom of the nose and the Hair cropped, and it is expected that Officers of Companies will set the example.

By order— CHAS. ANTHONY,
Adj. Corps Artillery.

It is interesting to compare with these Orders of 1815 the following Orders on the same subject thirty-three years later at the close of the Mexican War:

Genl. Orders
No. 35

WAR DEPARTMENT,
ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,
WASHINGTON, July 6, 1848.

A Proclamation by the President of the United States of America announcing the termination of the War with Mexico.

(Here follows the Treaty)

(Here follow directions as to discharge of officers and men of the ten additional Regiments, of the Volunteer troops, Recruits, &c., in 10 paragraphs.)

Paragraph No. 11 is as follows:

11. The *hair to be short,* or what is generally termed *cropped:* the whiskers not to extend below the lower tip of the ear, and a line thence with the curve of the mouth: Moustaches will not be worn (*except by Cavalry regiments*) by officers or men on any pretence whatever. (*Army Regulations, page 215.*)

The non-observance of the above regulation (tolerated during the war with Mexico) is no longer permitted. It is enjoined upon all officers to observe and enforce the regulation.

By order of the Secretary of War.

R. JONES,
Adjt Genl.

Further and very interesting and intimate notes on the fortifications of Governors Island are found in the writings of the Duke of Saxe-Weimar:

THOMPSON

GOVERNORS ISLAND FROM THE BATTERY

1829

September 1825

"Colonel Bankhead of the 2nd Artillery Regt offered to show me the fortifications of New York. We sailed in a boat along with General Swift, first to Governors Island. Upon this Island is a fort of red sandstone called Columbus. It consists of 4 bastions. In the interior are barracks and arsenals, the former inhabited by a Company of Artillery. * * * I found a Bible in each room. West of the Fort is a tower after the style of Montalembert called Castle Williams. * * * Colonel Marea of the Artillery in the Fort received me with 21 guns.

The officers have lodgings and gardens on the glacis of the Fort: likewise a wooden barrack which serves in time of war for a battalion of infantry. A large two story brick house with piazza is intended for Headquarters and the Commanding General. * * *

At Castle Williams I observed furnaces for heating shot".

Duke of Saxe-Weimar's "Travels" , I, page 127.

K. N.

CHAPTER IV.

Mexican and Civil War

The Mexican and Civil Wars were so far removed geographically from New York that the activities of the Governors Island Garrison were naturally of a different nature from those in the stirring times of the Revolution of 1776 and of the lesser War of 1812. This period may therefore be passed over more briefly in order not to prolong unduly our story.

In 1847 the 1st New York Volunteer Infantry was mustered in on Governors Island, Colonel Ward Burnett, a graduate of West Point, commanding. After gallant service in Mexico the Regiment returned to New York and their colours were preserved for many years in the Governor's Room in the City Hall. In 1907 they were presented to Governors Island by the City and with imposing military and ecclesiastical ceremonies were installed in the chapel of Saint Cornelius the Centurion, where their tattered remnants now hang. A dozen or more survivors of the Mexican War participated in the ceremonies. The history of the colours which follows is taken from the official tablet accompanying the flags upon their removal from the City Hall.

History of the Colors
of the
1st N. Y. Regiment—Mexican War

The First Regiment of New York Volunteers in the Mexican War was presented with a stand of Colors on January 8th, 1847, by the City of New York. The Colonel of the Regiment, Ward B. Burnett, received the Colors personally, part of the Regiment having sailed for

Mexico before the date of presentation. The flags were received by the Regiment when the first parade took place after the presentation, on the Mexican Island of Lobos about sixty miles north of Vera Cruz where the fleet containing the army assembled. The officers of the Regiment were called to the front and centre, where they formed a circle about the Colors. Each officer placed his left hand on one of the staffs, raised his right hand, and took a solemn oath under the direction of Colonel Burnett to protect the flags with his life blood. The Colors consisted of two flags and two guide colors, one the national flag and the other a red flag with the coat of arms of the City of New York on one side and the coat of arms of the State on the other. The red flag was the first over the inner wall of the Castle of Chapultepec, on the morning of September 13th, 1847. Color Sergeant Hipolite Dardonville carried the red flag. Orderly Sergeant Robert M. Harper, of Company D, supported him on one side and 1st Lieutenant Francis E. Pinto supported him on the other. All went over the wall together. The Regiment took an active part in the siege and capture of Vera Cruz, the storming of Cerro Gordo Pass, the taking of the City of Puebla, the battle of Contreras and Churubusco, where Color Sergeant Romein was killed, the storming of the Castle of Chapultepec, where Color Guide Zimmerman was killed inside of the inner wall of the Castle, and the capture of the City of Mexico. The Regiment belonged to the 1st Division that entered the City at daybreak of the morning of September 14th, 1847.

Among the officers in this distinguished Regiment was Thos. W. Sweeny who served as lieutenant in Company "A" First Regiment, New York Volunteers, participating in the campaign under General Winfield Scott from the Siege of Vera Cruz to the storming of Churubusco, August 20, 1847, where he received wounds that necessitated the amputation

LIEUTENANT THOMAS W. SWEENY

FIRST REGIMENT, NEW YORK VOLUNTEERS

FROM A DAGUERREOTYPE TAKEN IN 1847

Thomas W. Sweeny served as Lieutenant, First New York Volunteers, during the War with Mexico, participating in the campaign under General Winfield Scott, from the siege of Vera Cruz to the storming of Churubusco, August 20, 1847, where he was wounded and lost his right arm. At the close of the war he became a Lieutenant in the Second U. S. Infantry, and was engaged in many Indian campaigns and in the War of the Rebellion attaining the rank of Brigadier-General. On 11 May, 1870, he was placed on the retired list of the Army with the full rank of Brigadier-General and died at Astoria, Long Island, April 10, 1892, in the 72nd year of his age.

of his right arm. At the close of the Mexican War he was commissioned second-lieutenant in the Second United States Infantry, participating in many Indian campaigns and in the War of the Rebellion, attaining the rank of Brigadier-General and was retired from active service May 11, 1870. He died at Astoria, Long Island, April 10, 1892, in the 72nd year of his age. He referred to the 1st New York in a letter of Oct. 25, 1846, ending with the words:

> * * * All the regulars that were on Gov. Island were sent off on Friday last in the steamship *Massachusetts,* to the number of 700 men.

Four cannon, 24 pdr. bronze howitzers, are mounted at the steps of the Chapel leading from the nave into the choir. The inscription on each of these cannon, which are used to carry the chains across the choir, is as follows:

Vera Cruz, Cerro Gordo, Contreras,
Churubusco, Chapultepec,
City of Mexico, 1847.

A letter from Captain Hungerford to George W. Morton, Esq., New York, gives some additional data in regard to this distinguished Regiment, mustered in on Governors Island and memorialized by the exhibition of their Colours in the Chapel. It may be mentioned in this connection that Veterans of this Regiment come occasionally to look upon their old colours and at the cannon mounted below them inscribed with the names of the battles in which they served. The letter follows:

> City of Mexico—Halls of Montezuma.
> Decr 7th, 1847.
>
> The 2d Reg^{t} New York Volunteers in the Mexican War (known later as the 1st New York) were at Churubusco with 300 men, 2 companies being on detached service.

> The Regiment lost in killed and wounded 115. At Chapultepec the Regiment was the first to enter the works, carrying our colours, and the National standard was the first that took the breeze over Chapultepec. The flag of the Empire State was displayed from the balcony of the building (City Hall?) the Colour Sergeant not being able to find the passage leading to the top of the building.

The colours are in a very tattered condition, the National ensign in particular having only part of the Union and a little fringe left. This is reasonably supposed to be the state in which they were brought back from Mexico, as they have been preserved since 1848 in a glass case in the Governor's Room, New York City Hall.

Another interesting reminder of the Mexican War to be seen in the Chapel is a large oil painting, a Pieta, which was once the property of Colonel Thomas Staniford. The brass plate underneath recites that the "painting is donated as a memorial to the widow of the late Doctor N. S. Jarvis, U. S. A., Jennie B. Jarvis, a noble and faithful servant of God, identified with the Army for a period of over 70 years, who died May 26, 1907." Colonel Staniford was a veteran of the War of 1812, and was distinguished for gallantry and good judgment in the Florida and Mexican Wars. He served on Governors Island in the 30's.

The Votive Shield in the Chapel referred to on p. 195 recalls the dramatic sinking of the "San Francisco" in 1853.

In November and December, 1853, the Headquarters, Band and Companies, A. B. C. D. G. H. I. K. and L. of the 3rd Artillery, about 300 officers and men, were on Governors Island awaiting orders for station on the Pacific Coast.

They sailed for San Francisco via Cape Horn on December 22, 1853, on the "San Francisco", a side wheel steamer of

3000 tons, Captain James T. Watkins. There were 740 persons on board. Before leaving they had placed in the Governors Island chapel an heraldic shield with the name of the organization and date of their being here, little thinking of the way in which they were to return to their station. The "San Francisco" almost at once ran into heavy weather which soon became a tornado, and at 9 A. M. on December 24th a huge wave swept everything from the upper deck, including the main cabin, and carried with it about 175 persons who had taken refuge there. The brig "Napoleon," too small to render practical assistance, carried news of the wreck to Boston. The Government at once sent vessels to the rescue, and the survivors, nearly 600 persons, were taken off the "San Francisco" by the American Ship "Antarctic," the American bark "Kilby" and the British ship "Three Bells." The boats of the vessel were swept away by the sea and her fires were put out and she soon sprang a leak. The soldiers and other passengers rendered aid by manning the pumps and jettisoning the cargo. Lieutenant L. K. Murray, U. S. N., a passenger on the "San Francisco," set a splendid example of heroism.

The "Kilby" took her rescued people to Boston. The "Antarctic" proceeded to Liverpool, where the survivors of the wreck were not allowed to land and after long delay they were returned to New York. The survivors of the "Three Bells" were more fortunate, being landed at New York January 13th, 1853, three weeks after the disaster.

The return of the survivors to Governors Island is described by the son of a 3rd Artillery bandsman, whose father and mother were on the "San Francisco," as being a thrilling occasion. Visitors to the Chapel will find a second shield erected by the survivors of the Regiment "in sorrow and

thankfulness." The shield is described with others of the Mexican War period, on page 195.

The 3rd Artillery at the time of leaving Governors Island was commanded by Colonel William Gates. His son was lost in the wreck, also the wife of Captain George Taylor. The officers lost were Major John Macrae Washington, 1st Lieutenant Horace B. Field and 1st Lieutenant Richard H. Smith, all of the 3rd Artillery.

PERIOD OF 1861

"Another interval of pipeclay and monotonous guard duty was succeeded by the stirring times of 1861-65, when Governors Island became the important depot for the United States. The ancient Castle became the dungeon for Confederate prisoners of war, large numbers being confined there during the war and several executions taking place." Doctor Robertson recalls an interesting event of 1863. During the draft riots of that year the troops stationed on Governors Island were guarding the Sub-Treasury in Wall Street. Their absence was seized by the rioters as a time for attacking the Island and capturing ammunition, rifles and stores. The City

authorities, hearing of this movement, withdrew all ferry-boats from their slips. The rioters, however, secured other boats and soon were on their way to the Island. Eighty employés of the Ordnance Department hurriedly armed themselves with muskets, trained some cannon on the invaders and succeeded in repulsing the attack. At various periods of the Civil War large bodies of troops were encamped on Governors Island going to and returning from the front. On one occasion seven regiments were encamped here at one time and an eyewitness has described to the author the stirring events of those days and the inspiring scene from the glacis when this large body of troops was formed for retreat.

A Hospital was erected at this period. The middle wing survives in the present* Dept. Hdqrs. Bldg., the school building and others near by representing the various wards. The Castle was crowded with prisoners during the Civil War. Chaplain McVickar, who began his chaplaincy in one war and ended it in another, with the visitation of Cholera in 1849 between the two, had much to do with and for these prisoners of war. Bishop Whittingham of Maryland writing to him in 1861, says: "I am greatly pleased to find how thoroughly you had anticipated all that I wished to ask you about your work in the Port of New York."

The Castle is still (1922) used as a Military Prison U. S. Disciplinary Barracks. The stone magazines at the gate have been taken down to provide place for a much-needed guard house, which is built of the same material just inside the main gate.

A picture in *Harper's Weekly* (May, 1861) shows troops drilling on Governors Island near the Administration Building. A view of the courtyard of the Barracks discloses a fence around the centre of the enclosure.

* Now used for Officers' quarters.

The book records on file in Washington of Fort Columbus at this period are as follows: Record of Convalescents, Stragglers, etc., Union Forces, Received and Forwarded, 1863, 1864, 1865, and Record of Deserters and General Prisoners confined 1865-1870. To transcribe these would be hardly warranted by the scope of this book. An incident of April, 1865, throws light upon the use of the Castle for prisoners of war, of whom there were sometimes 1000 confined at one time.

The account was written lately in connection with the election of the hero of this incident, William Robert Webb, as United States Senator from Tennessee.

"Three days before the surrender of Lee at Appomattox, in April, 1865, a young Confederate officer, William Robert Webb, was held as a prisoner of war in the stockade about Castle Williams on Governor's Island. He had been brought North from Virginia only one day before. Webb could look over the stockade toward the lower end of Manhattan, and could see the city easily. Although he had been so badly injured that he could not march with the infantry, and had changed to the cavalry arm, he seemed to see only the city wharves, and not the four hundred yards of water in the channel between. After dark he climbed the stockade and slipped from the wall into the bay.

"The chill of early April was still in the water. In spite of it, Webb swam across to a point just below Castle Garden, now the Aquarium, and lifted himself upon the dock. He wore a faded Confederate uniform, and found himself enjoying the doubtful freedom of a hostile city clad in this garb and wringing wet. A citizen spoke to him in Battery Park.

" 'Who are you?' he said. 'How did you come to fall in?'

"'I swam across from the Island,' Webb answered. 'I escaped from the prison stockade over there. I am Capt. Webb of the Confederate army.'

"The citizen laughed and passed on. There with the lights of the prison twinkling just across the channel several other loungers and passers-by asked Webb the same questions and got the same answer.

"Webb stayed in the city for three days wearing his uniform and telling every one who asked for his story the plain truth. Doubtless if the war had gone on for some time, he might have been retaken. As it was, he went free."

Webb was Captain and Adjutant of the 2nd North Carolina Cavalry.

Another amusing escape from the Castle related by a contemporary was that of a Confederate soldier who in some way managed to get out of a gate just as the sentry had passed. He ran as far as he could while the sentry was on the beat. Just before the sentry turned the prisoner also turned and boldly approached the main gate. The sentry, perceiving him, ordered him peremptorily away from the Castle, stating that visitors were not allowed to come near the gate, an order that coincided remarkably with the views of the Southern tourist who carried it into instant effect and did *not* return.

The inscription on the Castle, not often seen because of the overgrowth of vines, is the name Castle Williams carved on a keystone over the main gate with graceful flourishes. To the left on a large block of stone are the words

Commenced	and to the right, in the	Compleated
1807	spelling of the day,	1811

The guns, except those on the parapets, were removed in 1893.

CHAPTER V.

Garrison Events and Notes, 1868-1922

In this chapter various data of more or less importance are cited to throw light upon the life of the Garrison.

Governors Island remained an Artillery post till 1850, then it was a Recruiting Depot till 1878, when it became Division Head Quarters with an Artillery Garrison. In 1894, the Garrison became an Infantry one and so remains.

The following brief extracts are taken from the Medical History of the Post by Surgeons Page and Elbrey, 1866:

Sea wall built at S. W. side of Island—1868—July, Mean strength of the Garrison in this month—618 men.

1870—August—172 cases of yellow fever—Troops in camp—drills omitted.

1869—The Music Boys being too crowded in South Battery, half their number went into camp, wall tents being used.

1870—September—yellow fever—66 cases.

The S. E. portion of the Island appears the most infected. In one set of quarters 21 were sick out of 22. In another, 33 out of 40. This part of the Island was quarantined from the rest. The caretaker in the Chapel stricken with the disease—removed to hospital.

October—Total number of cases of yellow fever, 131. Patients transferred to West Bank Hospital, 10 miles down the Bay. Many died as result of transfer. Chaplain Alexander Davidson caring for soldiers, takes the disease and dies.

1871—March—Buildings in which yellow fever existed torn down.

In 1868 the barracks in Fort Jay were as now, but the one on west side was used for Officers' Quarters. The officers' quarters were divided on either side of the sally port into two parts by a hall, on each side of which were communicating rooms, 16 rooms in all and 8 kitchens reckoned for 8 sets of quarters.*

From Circular No. 8, Surgeon Generals' Office, by Surgeon J. J. Millan we learn some details as to buildings on the Post. The Long building near the Commanding General's quarters, East of the Fort, was at one time a Court Martial and billiard room and was used occasionally for dances. The Q. M. Row, near South Battery, was built in 1871. This Row contains 19 quarters for families of employés. On the site of the present Chapel stood a frame building used for band quarters, later for Post Library and later still as a residence for the Boat Captains. In 1905 when the Chapel was built it was removed to a position near the Quartermaster's Office and stables.

This building at one time was the Garrison Library and contained a fine collection of books. The first floor was used for school purposes; the second floor for the library. It was burned in 1869 and the books were destroyed.

The first cemetery was near the present Colonel's Row; the second was near the old Chapel. The victims of the yellow fever and cholera were buried here. The iron fence that surrounded this graveyard stands now behind the General's Row on the Lower Road. The Pest House stood near the present Colonel's quarters, Regimental Row. The present hospital was built about 1878. No interments were allowed in the Cemetery after 1878 and in 1886 the remains

* It is interesting to note that in 1922 the barracks on all sides of the Quadrangle are used for Officers' quarters.

were removed to the National Cemetery, Cypress Hills, Brooklyn.

A few years ago (1907) remains were found during excavations for repairs at one of the quarters in Colonel's Row. This discovery recalled the site of the first Cemetery established on Governors Island. There is no known record of its date, and it is quite possible that the British used it during their occupation, 1776-1783, as war conditions would make it difficult to establish one elsewhere.

Since then a number of skeletons have been found, also domestic implements, an Artillery flat button of the period of 1812, a silver Spanish coin dated 1742 and other relics.

Governors Island was visited by epidemics of cholera in 1854, 1857, 1866, 1867 and 1868, and by the yellow fever in 1856 and 1870. These epidemics were general in their character, affecting not only New York but adjacent territory. The fact of the Island's being a Recruiting Station during that time serves to explain the failure to quarantine the Garrison.

The Hospital was overcrowded with soldiers and the other cases of which there were an enormous number, as noted on p. 111, were treated in the various houses in which they occurred.

RECORDS OF THE CEMETERY

The following list of burials, while accurate in detail, probably omits the names of some, especially of those who were transferred to West Bank Hospital during the yellow fever of 1870, and of the prisoners of War, it being believed that more died in confinement than given in the list below:

List of Officers and Members of their Families Buried on Governors Island

	DATE OF DEATH
Charles Frye, child	Sept. 27, 1798
Constant Freeman, child	Aug. 5, 1799
Robert Heaton, Jr., Lieut. 2d U. S. Art'y	Oct. 17, 1799
Mildred K. Souder, child	Sept. 6, 1807
James H. Boyle, Major U. S. Art'y	Febr. 8, 1816
Helen S. Churchill, child	Sept. 27, 1818
Samuel Armstrong, Lieut. U. S. Art'y	Sept. 8, 1819
Lydia Gates, wife of Major Lemuel Gates	Aprl. 26, 1822
W. J. Page, child	Febr. 10, 1823
James C. DeKamp, status unknown	Febr. 29, 1854
Susan J. DeKamp, wife of above	Sept. 11, 1824
James Mann, Surgeon	Nov. 7, 1843
Eliza F. Brown, child of Capt. H. Brown	June 3, 1835
Julia A. Brown, child of Capt. H. Brown	Dec. 15, 1836
William Gates, Col. and Bvt. Brig.-Genl., 3d U. S. Art'y	Oct. 7, 1868
Collinson R. Gates, Bvt. Major, 8th U. S. Infantry	June 28, 1849
Sarah M. Gates, wife of Col. Wm. Gates	Oct. 27, 1843
Mary Reed Collins Gates, child of Wm. Gates	Dec. 3, 1838
Lydia Bedloe Gates, child of Wm. Gates	Febr. 28, 1839

	DATE OF DEATH
Samuel L. Russel, Capt. 2d U. S. Inf'y	Febr. 26, 1839
James Green, Capt. 2d U. S. Art'y	Aug. 17, 1842
Alexander Cummings, Colonel	Jan. 31, 1842
L. M. Shackleford, Lieut. 1st U. S. Art'y	Oct. 12. 1847
H. D. Wallen (Samuel G.), child of H. D. Wallen	Mar. 22, 1848
Sidney Smith, Lieut. 1st U. S. Art'y	Nov. 6, 1849
B. K. Pierce, Lt.-Col. 1st U. S. Art'y	Aprl. 1, 1850
——Pierce, daughter of above	No date
F. F. ——, Lieut	No date
C. B. ——, Lieut	No date
William Walters, Capt. M. S. K	June 27, 1864
Katie Walters, daughter of above	June 26, 1860
Ward Miller, child of Lieut. T. E. Miller	Sept. 25, 1862
Robert O. Abbott, Col. and Surgeon	June 16, 1867
T. A. H. Gabel, Lieut. Batn. Major 45th U. S. Infantry	Dec. 12, 1868
Bessie Auman, child of Lieut. Auman	Febr. 19, 1875
Joseph Plympton, Col. 1st Inf'y.	No date
*removed to Woodlawn Cemetery, N.Y.C.	Nov. 6, 1897
—— Courtney, child	No date
Thomas B. Weir, Captain 7th U. S. Cavalry	Dec. 9, 1876
Charles McCormick, Col. and Surgeon U. S. A.	Aprl. 28, 1877

Officers and families	39
Enlisted men and their families known are	169
Enlisted men and their families unknown are	191
Military convicts	4
families	60
Total	463

*From National Cemetery, Cypress Hills.

The reinterment of officers was made in a row on the North side of the Cemetery; of the non-commissioned officers and privates about the middle of the Cemetery, east of the centre line.

Among the stones which were removed from Governors Island and re-erected in 1878 are two of a fine brown sandstone, beautifully cut in the ancient style with inscriptions which are given here:

SACRED TO THE MEMORY OF WILLIAM MCINTYRE,
LATE SERJEANT IN CAPT. RICHARD WHILEY'S
COMPANY U. S. REGT. OF ARTILLERISTS, WHO
DEPARTED THIS LIFE MAY THE 12TH 1808.

The other is in memory of

HIRAM ANDRUS
OF CO. F, 4TH REGT. OF
U. S. ARTILLERY
WHO DIED AT FORT COLUMBUS
JULY 10, 1833.

Another of white marble, with a non-commissioned officer's sword and belt carved at the top records the death of

SERGEANT CHARLES HENKE
BORN IN DENMARK
NOV. 12, 1794
DIED JAN'Y 14, 1872
AGED 78 YEARS—
IN THE 50TH YEAR OF HIS SERVICE IN THE
U. S. ARMY

List of Enlisted Men and their Families and Civilians Buried on Governors Island

	DATE OF DEATH
William McIntyre, Sergt. U. S. Art'y	May 12, 1868
Ann Snelling, child	Oct. 28, 1815
William Patterson, Sergt.	Sept. 3, 1826
Catherine Littlefield, wife of Walter Littlefield	Aprl. 11, 1829
William Cherrington	July 10, 1830
Adeline M. McGuire, daughter of James McGuire	Oct. 3, 1830
John B. Manning	June 2, 1831
Hiram Andrus, 4th U. S. Art'y	Febr. 10, 1833
Harman L. Hemstreet, Music Boys	Mar. 7, 1833
Douglas Morrison, child	Dec. 19, 1833
May Morrison, child	Dec. 19, 1833
Ann E. L. Morrison	Aug. 27, 1845
Jane Douglass, wife of R. Douglass	Mar. 24, 1847
George W. Douglass, child of R. Douglass	Mar. 24, 1847
William F. Fried, child	Oct. 31, 1848
Wilhelmina Fried	No date
John Fried, Sergt. Co. B, Union Boys	Sept. 20, 1865
John Hughes, Sergt. 4th U. S. Art'y	Jan. 7, 1851
Martha Hughes, wife of John Hughes	Mar. 7, 1852
Mary ——, "our Mary," child of John Hughes (supposed)	No date
Charles Stanley, Musician	Mar. 18, 1854
Ann Henke, wife of Charles Henke	Sept. 2, 1856
Charles Henke, Sergt. Co. B, Music Boys	Jan. 14, 1872
Esther T. Pfefferle, child	July 28, 1856
Francis Smith	Oct. 3, 1856
David L. Walsh, Sergt.	Jan. 9, 1857

	DATE OF DEATH
Jessie Horan, child	May 15, 1861
Ann M. Lowe, child	July 17, 1861
Alexander D. Hoyt, child	May 29, 1861
John B. Pinghard	Feb. 28, 1856
Maria Pinghard, wife of John B. Pinghard	May 29, 1862
Bridget Stuart, wife of Sergt. Patk. S. Stuart	Aug. 12, 1868
William R. Stuart, child of Sergt. Patk. S. Stuart	May 5, 1863
Mary J. Stuart, child of Sergt. Patk. S. Stuart	Apr. 28, 1868
Rosanna Stuart, child of Sergt. Patk. S. Stuart	Aug. 22, 1868
John Haintz, Sergt. Ordnance, U. S. A.	Feb. 1, 1864
Julia Haintz, child of John Haintz	April 18, 1865
Mary Haintz, child of John Haintz	No date
Fred Haintz, child of John Haintz	Sept. 25, 1870
P. H. Guerin, Sergt. Co. A, Permt. Party, U. S. A.	Feb. 23, 1864
Emeline Allen, wife of G. W. Allen	Apr. 16, 1864
John Henion, Pv't Co. B, Union Boys	Nov. 21, 1864
William Head, Sergt.	Apr. 24, 1865
William N. Head, child of Wm. Head	Nov. 3, 1865
James Casey, Pv't Co. A, Permt. Party, U. S. A.	Aug. 13, 1866
Hutchinson M. Howe, Pv't. Co. A, Permt. Party, U. S. A.	Sept. 13, 1870
Albert Lagenboner, child	Jan. 24, 1877
Gustav N. Lagenboner, child	Feb. 9, 1877
Hannah M. Kieley	June 12, 1861
Patrick Kieley, child	No date
Giles D. Taylor, child	July 15, 1869
Winford R. Farlie, child	May 18, 1864
George H. Arthur, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 16, 1866

DRAWBRIDGE, SALLY PORT AND MOAT

FORT JAY

	DATE OF DEATH
William Meredith, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 5, 1866
John Moore, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 3, 1866
David Lieberson, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 8, 1866
James Smith, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 6, 1866
Thomas Kelly, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 5, 1866
Patrick Riley, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 28, 1866
Rudolph Kaimer, Mus. Co. B, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 20, 1866
Charles McKoon, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 15, 1866
Robert Wolf, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 4, 1866
Herbert Dailey, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 21, 1866
Elias Morris, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 24, 1866
John McHugh, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 25, 1866
Thomas Wheeler, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 30, 1866
Thomas Martin, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 30, 1866
Isaac J. Robinson, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 28, 1866
Peter Glandon, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 16, 1866
James Connors, Prisoner	July 15, 1866
Francis King, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 13, 1866
John McMahon, Pvt. Co. B, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 18, 1866

DATE OF DEATH

John McColgan, Mus. Co. B, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... July 20, 1866
Lawrence Broderick, Mus. Co. B, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... July 20, 1866
Frederick W. Johnson, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... July 21, 1866
Alexander Wise, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... July 19, 1866
Henry Wier, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. July 31, 1866
George Rixford, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... July 26, 1866
David Ewing, Prisoner Co. B, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Aug. 3, 1866
David Forney, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Sept. 28, 1866
Fritz Mathisson, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Aug. 18, 1866
Daniel Dunford, Mus. Co. B, Gen. Serv., U. S A. ..... July 20, 1866
Francis Lurst, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Aug. 11, 1866
Monroe McKelsey, Pvt. Co. C, Permt. Party, U. S. A. ..... Aug. 7, 1866
Carl Gross, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. Aug. 7, 1866
Charles Howe, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Aug. 4, 1866
Martin Coster, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Sept. 15, 1866
Henry Boyer, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. Aug. 3, 1866
Josiah Harrison, Mus. Boys, Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... July 20, 1866
Emanuel Ferguson, Pvt. 9th U. S. Inf'y .... July 23, 1866

	DATE OF DEATH
Abraham Walk, Pvt. Co. B, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 31, 1866
Joseph Emerson, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 10, 1866
John R. P. Smith	Aug. 1, 1866
J. Denanny	No date
James Neland, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 26, 1866
Christ. Saltmeyer, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 12, 1866
Peter Burke, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 26, 1866
John Bush, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 17, 1866
Lewis T. Young, Pvt.	Jan. 3, 1856
Elizabeth G. Ives	July 7, 1873
Charles Bessamore, Co. B, Union Boys	June 20, 1861
Frederick O'Brien, child	Mar. 24, 1862
Winifred O'Brien, child	Mar. 27, 1862
Fred. Reynolds	Aug. 17, 1862
—— Reynolds	No date
William Gulick, Sgt. Co. F, Permt. Party	June 25, 1862
Alexander Moore, Pvt. Co. M, 2d U. S. Art'y.	Sept. 24, 1861
Franz Hooper, Pvt. Co. A, Permt. Party	Apr. 28, 1865
C. McCormick, Sgt. Co. A, Permt. Party, U. S. A.	Aug. 12, 1865
F. Holfriede, Pvt. Co. F, 1st U. S. Art'y.	Nov. 2, 1861
Frederick Grunert, child	July 11, 1872
J. Johnson, Pvt. Co. C, 6th U. S. Infty.	Dec. 25, 1861
Walter Kilborn, Pvt. Co. K, 91st N. Y. Infty.	Jan. 5, 1862
J. Morrison, Pvt. Co. G, 98th N. Y. Infty.	Jan. 6, 1862
W. A. Huckbone, Pvt. Co. I, 91st N. Y. Infty.	Jan. 9, 1862
W. McBride, Pvt. Co. F, Permt. Party	May 19, 1862
John Fish, Pvt. Co. E, 91st N. Y. Infty.	Jan. 17, 1862
W. Simmons, Pvt. Co. I, 91st N. Y. Infty.	Jan. 30, 1862

	DATE OF DEATH
Joseph or James Trumble, Sgt. Co. G, Permt. Party	Dec. 2, 1861
David Flecke, Corp. Co. A, Permt. Party	Dec. 16, 1861
Francis Shields, Sgt. Co. I, Permt. Party	Oct. 1, 1861
—— Robertson, woman	No date
Grace Robertson, child	No date
P. Griffin, Pvt. Co. H, 1st U. S. Infty	Feb. 20, 1862
Alfred Pitt, Pvt. Co. E, 98th N. Y. Infty	Feb. 23, 1862
Patrick Conkly, Pvt. Co. H, 28th Mass. Infty.	Mar. 7, 1862
James Carr, Musician	Feb. 22, 1863
Charles Allen, Corp. Co. K, 7th N. Y. Infty.	Dec. 18, 1864
Rudolph Schaer, child	Sept. 15, 1867
William Muller, Pvt. Co. D	Mar. 6, 1866
James Kellog, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 19, 1867
Fernando Snyder, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 18, 1867
Adelbert Rogers, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 16, 1867
William Swain, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 14, 1867
Christ. Nolte, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 6, 1867
Adolph Aikens, Pvt. Co. C, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 11, 1867
John H. Etzold, Pvt. Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 12, 1867
Benjamin Williams, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 5, 1867
John Horan, Recruit, U. S. A.	Sept. 3, 1867
Christ. Liesbert, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 1, 1867
Henry Peck, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 5, 1867
Edward McLaughlin, Pvt. U. R. C., U. S. A.	Sept. 3, 1867
Charles Donnely, Pvt. Co. B, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 1, 1867

	DATE OF DEATH
Frank Gallagher, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 31, 1867
Francis McKeon, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Oct. 2, 1866
Thomas Patston, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 24, 1867
James Patston, child of T. Patston	No date
Lewis Vassell, Pvt. Co. B, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 2, 1867
Joseph Recaid, Recr. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 31, 1867
Oliver Hersher, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	July 4, 1866
William Hilliers, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 6, 1866
Patrick Hart, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Aug. 8, 1866
Frederick Weil, Prisoner, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Sept. 22, 1866
Simon S. Schultz, child	Sept. 16, 1866
P. McGuire, Pvt. Co. G, 28th Mass. Infty	Feb. 19, 1862
Henry Shipley, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Oct. 3, 1866
Andreas P. Karberg, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Oct. 6, 1866
Henry Schlegel, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Oct. 13, 1866
Frank Jones, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Oct. 15, 1866
John H. Totten, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Oct. 19, 1866
John Heberger, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Oct. 20, 1866
John Sanberg, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A.	Oct. 27, 1866

DATE OF DEATH

Frederick Traub, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Nov. 6, 1866
Martin Leonard, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Dec. 4, 1866
Edward Tryer, Pvt. ..... Feb. 2, 1867
John Jones, Corp. Co. C, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. .. Mar. 27, 1867
Louis A. Harry, Pvt. ..... Apr. 6, 1867
Andrew Flickinger, Pvt. ..... Apr. 15, 1867
Thomas McHugh, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Nov. 7, 1867
John Hooley, Pvt. 1st Prov. Co., Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Apr. 14, 1869
Thomas Cryon, Pvt. Co. C ..... Aug. 25, 1868
Patrick Byrne, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Apr. 25, 1868
John Kennedy, Pvt. Co. A, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Jan. 3, 1868
John Burke, Pvt. Co. A, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. .. Nov. 22, 1867
John Smith, Pvt. Co. A, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. .. Oct. 29, 1867
Charles Huber, Pvt. C. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Oct. 8, 1867
Frank Burke, Pvt. Co. A, Gen. Serv. U. S. A. .. Sept. 26, 1867
Carl Schaer, Pvt. Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Sept. 18, 1867
Henry Weber, Pvt. Co. C, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Sept. 14, 1867
George Gass, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. . Sept. 14, 1867
Robert F. Jern, Pvt. Co. C, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Sept. 11, 1867
John Hyler, Pvt. Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Sept. 10, 1867
Thomas McGrath, Prisoner Co. B, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Sept. 9, 1867

DATE OF DEATH

Thomas Flynn, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Sept. 6, 1867
Frank Keckynar, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Sept. 8, 1867
James C. Elliot, Pvt. Co. D, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Sept. 6, 1867
Charles Dillman, Pvt. Co. B, Union Boys, U. S. A. ..... Sept. 29, 1865
Andrew T. Ford, Sergt. Co. C, Permt. Party, U. S. A. ..... Sept. 10, 1865
Jacob Haefele, Sergt. Co. C, Permt. Party, U. S. A. ..... Apr. 20, 1873
James Bodgers, child ..... Jan. 15, 1878
Magdalen Stigler, wife of Band Master ..... Mar. 11, 1878
Ann Mouriff ..... No date
George E. Hanna, child ..... Oct. 28, 1861
Samuel Meades, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Apr. 26, 1871
William Gibson, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Mar. 31, 1870
Stephen D. Lockwood, Pvt. Co. A, Permt. Party, U. S. A. ..... Feb. 20, 1870
Ellen Farrell, child ..... Apr. 11, 1862
Mela Reynolds, child ..... Aug. 25, 1873
Chris Marlin, Pvt. Co. B, Music Boys ..... May 23, 1873
William McFarland, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... Sept. 16, 1870
Peter Luck, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. .. Aug. 1, 1870
James Kelcher, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv., U. S. A. ..... June 24, 1870
Francis Gungent, Pvt. Co. D, Select Recruits. Apr. 12, 1870

	DATE OF DEATH
William Seery, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv. Recr.	Feb. 18, 1872
Henry Carroll, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv. Recr.	Jan. 1, 1872
William F. Curtis, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv. Recruit	Aug. 27, 1871
Joseph Villenger, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv. Recr.	Jan. 18, 1871
Thomas Sullivan, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv. Recr.	Sept. 25, 1870
Henry Rathkamp, Pvt. Co. A, Permt. Party.	Sept. 27, 1870
Henry Bennett, Pvt. Co. B, Music Boys	Oct. 1, 1870
Patrick Daley, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv.	Feb. 8, 1871
Willet C. West, Fifer Co. B, Music Boys	Mar. 25, 1871
Michael Kinsell, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv. Rcts.	May 7, 1871
James Colgan, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv. Rcts.	Mar. 5, 1872
Patrick Colden, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv. Rcts.	May 25, 1872
Peter Storms, Sergt. Co. A, Permt. Party	Oct. 19, 1863
Lizzie Corliss Lynch, child	No date
Daniel Nowlan, child	No date
John C. Indale, child	No date
Alfred B. Haynes, Pvt. Co. B, Music Boys.	July 23, 1873
Julius Steinman, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv. Rcts.	Oct. 24, 1873
Michael Morrissey, Pvt. Co. C, 22d U. S. Infty.	Aug. 20, 1872
Albert O. Dennis, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv. Rcts.	Mar. 29, 1872
Justus Schlessing, Pvt. Co. E, Gen. Serv. Rcts.	Mar. 13, 1872
Henry Christopher, Pvt. Co. C, Permt. Party.	Jan. 8, 1872
William Skelly, Pvt. Co. M, 5th U. S. Art'y.	Dec. 17, 1871
Robert Scott, Pvt. Co. A, Permt. Party	June 10, 1871
Jacob Mertins, Sergt. Co. A, Permt. Party.	Sept. 19, 1870
Patrick Leonard, Corp. Co. C, Permt. Party.	Sept. 17, 1870
Ernest Dallye, Pvt. Co. A, Permt. Party.	Sept. 13, 1870
Peter Creamer, Corp. Co. B, Music Boys	Sept. 10, 1870

Confederate Prisoners of War

	DATE OF DEATH
J. E. Barbury, Co. D, 28th N. Carolina	June 7, 1862
Hosea G. Blount, Co. F, 7th N. Carolina	Sept. 29, 1861
David L. Rodgeron, Co. F, 7th N. Carolina	Oct. 8, 1861
M. G. Roberson, Co. F, 7th N. Carolina	Oct. 11, 1861
Stephen Kite, Co. G, 7th N. Carolina	Oct. 27, 1861
Saml. D. Titterton, Co. F, 7th N. Carolina	Oct. 29, 1861
—— Simpson, Co. F, 7th N. Carolina	Nov. 19, 1861
Alpha Modlin	Nov. 24, 1861
—— Jennings	Mar. 11, 1862
Smith Bartley	May 30, 1862
G. Townsend, Pvt. Co. E, 27th N. Carolina	June 3, 1862

Inquiries are frequently made with reference to burials on Governors Island and the above list has been found useful, in one case the Chaplain being able to verify an interment made in 1818.

GARRISON LIFE

In the early days Governors Island must have been a dark place after retreat. Up to 1854 candles were the only source of illumination. Later, whale oil was introduced and then kerosene. Until 1878, when General Hancock made his headquarters here, there were no street lights at all, except one light at the dock, a condition which was not so brilliant as that enjoyed by New York in 1697, when the Common Council ordered the city to be lighted by lanterns from poles that projected from every seventh house.

The Common Council, at a stated meeting held at the House of John Simmons, Innholder at the N. W. corner of Wall and Nassau Streets (now the site of the Bankers' Trust Building) on the 17th day of February, 1784, issued a Warrant No. 15 to Wm. Deal and others for lighting the City lamps, to the amount of £21 5s.

Electric lighting was introduced on May 10, 1904. The Arsenal at that time had and for some time later continued to use acetylene gas manufactured at a private plant in the Yard.

Dances were held in various places at various times: at one time in the former Administration Building; in the old Hospital, where the Grand Duke Alexis of Russia was entertained in 1872, a marquee being erected in front; at one time in the present Warrant Officers' quarters, east side of Island, and later, as now, in the Officers' Club House, South Battery.

The water supply was in those days a troublesome question. Surgeon Page in his history (1868) writes:

"The wells are four in number. One is in Castle Williams and furnishes a small supply of tolerably good water. It

dries in ten minutes and requires some time to refill. Another well is in front of Fort Columbus, but unfit for drinking purposes. Another is near the old Hospital and is the best and most used on the Island, all the animals being watered at this well." The pump connected with this well was in situ, handle and all, as late as 1905.

Water from the City (Ridgewood) was introduced by mains under Buttermilk Channel about 1880, soon after General Hancock's arrival.

The Hospital mentioned in this report is the Hospital of 1868, now (1922) used for officers quarters. Another well not mentioned was in the Arsenal Yard. This was quite a pretty spot, arranged in the nature of a spring house, with a flight of stone steps going down and a little arbour to protect it from the sun.

A well of pure water in South Battery is also mentioned by Surgeon Page, who goes on to say that rain water is collected from the roofs of nearly all the buildings in cisterns. No attempts were made to sink artesian wells on account of the geological formation and great dip of the strata. In this connection it may be interesting to mention the natural history of Governors Island.

"The basic rock of the Island is gneiss composed of quartz, feldspar and mica arranged in laminæ, the rock being stratified and hypozoic, covered with alluvial and drift deposit. The direction of the stratum corresponds with N. S. and the dip, though generally to the west, averages within 10° vertical. The water now in use, derived from shallow wells, is hard and contains a great quantity of organic matter. The high angle dip and deep surrounding channels make good water unattainable. The alluvial deposits consist of loam, clay, sand and gravel. The drift is composed of abraded boulders, gravel and sand and all were driven probably by ice pressure. The

alluvial and diluvial deposits are probably 100 feet deep at the N. and S. ends."

The Island was undoubtedly separated from the mainland during the Glacial period.

Circular No. 8 (1875) states that the cisterns frequently ran dry. At these times they were cleaned and fumigated and filled with Croton water brought from the City in tanks of Quartermaster boats.

These cisterns are being gradually filled. A number were filled from the excavations of the new Chapel in 1905-6.

The use of the drum for calls was given up about 1876. There is a tradition that the last official drum hung in the tree where it was kept for a year or so after that time. An officer has told the author he remembers seeing it so on several occasions.

A marked depression in the surface of the Park near the fountain often arouses curiosity as to what it represents in the otherwise level surface of the ground.

Major Kendall, a veteran of the War of 1812, lived on Governors Island after retirement with his daughters and held the position of Sutler. His residence was at the western end of a long row of houses that stretched from the former Post Quartermaster's office and carpenter shop to what is now No. 18, Colonel's Row.

This row was of wooden houses, one story in height, with cellar, and besides the Sutler and his store accommodated a number of soldiers and their families.

According to tradition, these buildings were erected for the accommodation of the builders of Fort Jay after the American Revolution. Some believe they represent the English occupation of 1776-1783.* The beams and all the wood were of

* This is confirmed by the fact that the group of buildings as late as 1850 was called "Rotten Row."

very heavy construction. Some were burned down in 1856, and the rest were removed after the yellow fever epidemic in 1870. In removing them it was found inconvenient to fill in all the cellars, the supply of earth being limited. The depression alluded to marks this ancient row and probably Major Kendall's quarters.

Major Kendall, upon the burning of his quarters in 1856, moved to quarters in the S. E. angle of the barracks, Fort Columbus.

The condition of the works on Bedlow's and Ellis' Island and of the fortification at the Battery may be learned from Colonel Williams' Report of Jan'y 19, 1810, in which he says Ellis Island mounts 8 32 pdrs. with a platform capable of mounting 20; that Bedlow's Battery is ready for 8 or 10 mortars, with the main work of 40 guns half completed, and that by July the first tier of a castle at the Old Battery will be completed, mounting 30 of the heaviest guns. This castle was at first officially known as the South West Battery, after the war as Castle Clinton, whence its peaceful designation of Castle Garden was derived.

In 1822 Castle Clinton was ceded by the Government to the City of New York, and the soldiery were removed to Governors Island. At this time and for many years following Castle Clinton was separated from the shore by a channel and access was had by a long wooden bridge.

In addition to its military uses Governors Island served as a flagging station to report the arrival of ships before the invention of the telegraph. New York's most famous hotel in 1823 was Holt's, afterward the United States Hotel, on Fulton Street. This hotel had a lofty cupola in which a ship signal station was located. When ships were sighted at Sandy Hook the news was flagged to Staten Island, from Staten Island to Governors Island, the station being probably at the

Castle, and from there to the station on Holt's Hotel for the benefit of the whole City.

In Wall's painting of the Castle appears on the parapet a cupola which it is reasonable to suppose was the ship signal station.

Old pictures of the Castle, though later than this painting, show a flag flying from a staff erected in the middle of the courtyard. This flag was used 25 years ago for saluting and other special purposes only, the garrison flag being at Fort Jay. The staff was removed about 20 years ago. The guns, except those on the parapet, were removed about the same time.

In 1832, thorough repairs of the works were begun and prosecuted until August, when the work was abandoned on account of the cholera. In September, 1832, new barracks were begun within the fort, some of the troops having previously encamped on the parade. The scarp wall, the counter scarp revetments and the revetments of the glacis were completed, also the facing of the covered way revetment leading from Fort Columbus to the Castle.

In this year the Post was re-occupied by Battery F, 4th Artillery, under command of Captain L. Whiting. In September, 1836, Captain W. W. Tompkins with a large detachment of recruits of the 2nd Dragoons arrived and assumed command.

In 1833 the sum of $50,000 was appropriated for repairs to Castle Williams and Fort Columbus. How this was expended so far as the fort is concerned we learn from the report of Capt. J. L. Smith, Corps of Engineers, who writes under date of Oct. 19, 1833 (condensed):

"The scarp and curtain are finished. The counter scarp and revetment of the glacis are finished except the W. front. The passage way through the postern is raised to the height of the spring of the arch. Four cisterns, of 4,000 gallons each

are finished under the rampart. Four more are to be made. The redan with casemated flanks on the N. front was formerly approached from the parade through a gap in the rampart. The gap has been filled by a magazine.

The part of the hollow passage near the salient of the redan is to be occupied by two magazines for fixed ammunition or storage. This will enlarge the terreplain and the salient of the redan. The parapets are sodded and the glacis is being graduated."

Other additions and repairs to the Castle and Fort were made in 1836, for which were appropriated $20,000.

Company B of the permanent party called the "music boys," a detachment of recruits for the field music of the army, occupied the South Battery. On Dec. 28, 1836, the troops in garrison, with the exception of the recruits of the 2nd Dragoons, were ordered to Florida for the Seminole War.

On April 18, 1837, a battery of the 1st Artillery under Capt. J. Dimick occupied the post and Fort Columbus continued to be an Artillery Post until November 15, 1852, when Governors Island became a General Recruiting Depot vice Fort Wood, pursuant to Genl. Orders No. 38, Series of 1852, A. G. Office.

The Post was at once occupied by Battery A, 1st Artillery, under command of Capt. Joseph P. Sanger, the garrison being shortly afterwards strengthened by Battery D of the same Regiment.

From the Adjutant General's Notes we learn that a new Barbette battery was built in the 80's. This extended from the neighborhood of the Post Chapel N. W. across the Parade towards the Castle. It mounted a few guns and a modern earthwork battery was begun but not completed, and the entire battery was removed about 1893.*

* Remains of this battery were discovered in the Summer of 1910, when the salt-water mains were laid across the Island.

Plans were drawn as early as 1869 for a "New Barbette Battery" to cross the parade from the Castle S. E. to the Colonels' Row, but this was for some reason never begun.

In June, 1892, the armament of this Post, as given by the Adjutant General, was:

Thirty-six 10-inch Rodman guns, five 15-inch Rodman guns, two 8-inch siege howitzers, five 100-pdr. Parrott guns, two 4½-inch rifles, two 24-pdr. Coehorn mortars, two 8-inch siege mortars, two 10-inch siege mortars, one 13-inch sea coast mortar. Field Artillery—three Gatling guns, long barrel, caliber 45.

No continuous records exist to show the dates of the various buildings on the Island except the fortifications. The best available data at present indicate the building dates about as follows:

The Administration Building—date unknown—probably about 1840.

The Building, till lately used as the Post Headquarters, is believed to be of some antiquity. As stated elsewhere, the old name for it was "The Governor's House," which, if historically correct, would take it back to 1775 at the least. As late as 1872 and later it was used for the main guard.

The Old Commissary Building, 1845, and the Commanding General's Quarters, 1840.

Numbers 2-5 inclusive, General's Row, 1855-7.

Other quarters in General's Row, 1875.

Colonels' Row—Various periods—1875, 1878, 1888 and 1905.

Old Hospital—Main wing, 1840.

Regimental (Brick) Row, 1889 to 1908 (various dates).

New Hospital, 1880.

South Battery, 1812.

A tradition that this Battery was erected in 1834 arose probably from the fact that a second story was added to it in

that year. This upper story was in red brick. The lower story was painted yellow, and for several years this striking artistic effect prevailed. At some period, perhaps the same, the outer walls of the Battery, built of the Newark sandstone used for Castle Williams, were treated to a similar wash, which is happily disappearing under the kindly influence of Nature.

Second addition to South Battery 1904.

GOVERNORS ISLAND CLUB

South Battery

Since the first edition of this book the Author has found a Club publication, evidently the only one extant, which throws light upon its early history. The following extract is given.

On July 1st, 1878, the Headquarters of the Military Division of the Atlantic and the Department of the East were transferred from the Army Building, New York, to Governors Island, Major General Winfield Scott Hancock Commanding.

On June 20, 1879, by direction of General Hancock, an Officers' Mess was established in the South Battery, with the customary rules and regulations, the buildings being in charge of the Post Quartermaster.

The Steward of the Mess was John Rolf.

The date of the foundation of the Governors Island Club is unknown, but that it was an outgrowth of the Officers' Mess appears reasonably certain from the discovery of a printed book of Constitution, By-Laws and Membership of the Governors Island Club which records the proceedings of the Club at a meeting held on February 3rd, 1881, at which the Constitution and By Laws were adopted.

The Club at this date had a membership of 31, with the following officers:

President

General James B. Fry.

Vice-Presidents

Colonel John Mendenhall.
Colonel Thomas G. Baylor.

Treasurer

Colonel Charles T. Larned.

Secretary

Lieutenant John L. Chamberlain.

The Presidents of the Club, with no records between 1881 and 1904, have been as follows:

Presidents of the Club	January
General James B. Fry	1881
Colonel Henry O. S. Heistand	1904
Colonel Frederick A. Smith	1905
Major General James F. Wade	1906
Colonel Henry O. S. Heistand	1907
Colonel Henry O. S. Heistand	1908
Colonel Henry O. S. Heistand / Major General Leonard Wood	1909
Major General Leonard Wood	1910
Colonel Hobart K. Bailey	1911
Colonel Stephen C. Mills / Colonel George R. Cecil	1912
Colonel William A. Mann / Colonel William M. Black	1913
Colonel John B. Bellinger	1914
Colonel John B. Bellinger	1915
Colonel John B. Bellinger	1916
Colonel Orin B. Mitcham	1917
Colonel John C. F. Tilson	1918 — 1919
Colonel John C. F. Tilson	1920
Brig-General William Weigel	1921
Major General Robert Lee Bullard	1921 — 1922

The Officers of the Club, 1922

President .....Major General Robert Lee Bullard
1st Vice-President.....Colonel Francis E. Lacey, Jr.
2d Vice-President.....Major Allen W. Gullion
Secretary and Treasurer....Chaplain Edmund Banks Smith
Asst. Secretary and Treasurer.....Captain Paul Knight

A marble tablet over the sally Port marked SOUTH BATTERY, 1812 has recently been erected, restoring the old name of the Fort (v. p. 81) which, with a lantern of mediaeval form and a battery of Civil War field pieces parked in front, gives the Clubhouse a touch of its ancient military appearance.

As late as 1854 there were 50 Music Boys, 25 Drummers and 25 Fifers under charge of Sergeant (later Lieutenant) Michael Moore. He had quarters in what is now the Club billiard room. The barrack room on the ground floor had windows on the parade and the court. It was heated by a coal grate and tallow candles furnished light for reading.

Previous to that time at various periods dances had been given in the old Administration Building (west end), the old Hospital, and in the (present) Warrant Officers' quarters. The wooden wings of the Hospital of 1840 were built in 1862 and used as a General Hospital during the Civil War. The School House and adjoining frame buildings are reminders of this War Hospital.

Circular No. 4 (1870) mentions a married quarters near the old brick Hospital, and states that the Post Cemetery referred to elsewhere consisted of about half an acre.

An engineer map of 1857 shows a pump in the courtyard of the Castle just 15 feet south of the centre.

As late as 1870 there was in the courtyard of the Castle a reminder of the Civil War time in a long wooden building

used as a mess hall and kitchen for recruits. The upper tiers of the Castle were used as recruit quarters during the recruiting period, 1852-1878. The wooden building in the Castle was 60 x 30 feet and had a roof-pitch of 8 feet. It contained three small store-rooms and was furnished with two doors and ten windows.

A reference to this is found under date of Decr. 7th, 1871, when permission was asked to remove the powder from the magazines in the Castle and to store it in the Post magazines on the ground that "the fires kept in a wooden building used as a mess room and kitchen renders the opening and closing of the magazines dangerous."

In spite of the apprehension expressed in 1871, the powder remained till after the arrival of General Hancock, when it was removed from the Island except that which is stored in the Garrison magazine on the west glacis of Fort Jay.

This magazine in the midst of traffic, passed monthly by thousands, is probably not visited annually by a half dozen, and yet it is, next to the Castle, the oldest building in undisturbed condition on Governors Island, and is worth, for that reason, a few words of description.

This little magazine on the west glacis slope is a stone building with a stone dove-tailed roof and double walls, the interior ones of brick with ventilating apertures arranged to avoid the outside windows. The interior sheathing of the magazine is one inch white pine. On the north side is a ventilating window which at some period was bricked up and cemented. The wooden inside door is furnished with fine copper bolts. The interior ceiling is of heavy rough-hewn oak beams. On these beams are painted in black a number of names and initials of an early period, showing the magazine to date from at least the period of the Castle, 1807-11, and probably earlier, as the Castle had its own magazines and Fort Jay was (in part) of

earlier construction. These names are painted in bold characters and some of them are of artistic excellence. Among them are

W H 1812
C M 1812
C F Morton 1815

This magazine is at present used for the storage of saluting powder. It is surrounded by a fence of venerable appearance which is believed to have done picket duty long enough to entitle it to honourable mention. The warning sign over the door, though frequently renewed, also shows evidence of antiquity in the lettering employed.

Other powder magazines are to be found in Fort Jay in the north side of the barrack square. These magazines are on the right and left of the enclosed area under the ramparts. They have copper ventilators and barred entrances. In magazines Nos. 2 and 6 are inside wooden doors, grated, with small wooden trap doors near the top secured by a button on the outside. These have no value for purposes of ventilation and it is believed that at one period the magazines were used for prisoners and that the traps were for passing in food.

During the Civil War a double guarded cell was maintained in what is now the basement of Quadrangle, East. This consisted of an outside cell in which the guard was locked in and an inner one for the prisoner. One or more celebrated Confederate officers were imprisoned here before execution, including Captain John G. Beall, a Naval officer, who with two others, captured the S.S. "Philo Parsons" and S.S. "Island Queen." His execution took place February 24, 1865.

THE OLD POST HEADQUARTERS BUILDING

Although no date can be assigned for the erection of the building, till lately used as Post Headquarters, now as a residence, it seems clear to the author, as well as to others, that it is at least one of the oldest buildings on Governors Island.

A careful examination of the building indicates that it was built for a dwelling-house and used for a guard house or headquarters building. The rose panel decorations over the doorways and windows and the expensive character of the base mouldings carry out this theory.

This was possibly the family house mentioned in the British orders, page 46, but it was undoubtedly the guard house and headquarters of the period of 1812.* The lower part was at one time used for the main guard house, as the heavy iron bars of the ancient four-sided pattern clearly indicate, as well as their considerable corrosion at the lower ends due to the settling of moisture. One bar has been replaced by a modern round bar, revealing a probable escape, and one window is now entirely without bars, but the square sockets are plainly to be seen in the upper sill. The building itself is cross or T shape and additions of frame construction have been added at some unknown period. In one of these, at the N. W. angle, may be seen the sill of an exterior door. This shows signs of long use in the wearing away of the surface. In the lower part of the house the walls have been ceiled with wood and plaster and in one place part of the old foundation appears, disclosing a red sandstone similar to that used in

* Previous to 1840, when the present Comd'g Genl's Quarters were built, the Post Cmd'r lived with his family in this building. It was as late as that period called "The Governor's House."

Castle Williams, but for the most part the foundations, like the walls throughout, are of brick.

The lower room now used as a furnace room contains within it an interior apartment with remains indicating a door in the thickness of the wall. This is lighted by a very small, deep-set window with double iron bars of the old pattern. It is more than reasonable to believe this was the Black Hole referred to on page 81.

In addition to the fine rose mouldings on the first floor, a fire place and mantel of elaborate construction and the original arrangement of doors, both exterior and interior, lead to the theory held by some that although undoubtedly the guard house of 1812, it was perhaps used as a dwelling house at an earlier period as its common name of "Governor's House" in 1830 would seem to imply. An interior stair case was removed a few years ago and an outside stairway was erected, connecting the Sergeant-Major's office below with the Commanding Officer's above.

An historical account of Governors Island would not be complete without reference to its oldest inhabitant, to whom the author of this work wishes to express his thanks for many notes of historical interest.

Sergeant David Robertson, Hospital Steward, U. S. A., entered the Army in July, 1854, and served continuously in the Hospital Corps for 64 years.

Such length of service is almost unprecedented, and when it is combined with unbroken duty in one Garrison it deserves more than passing mention. In addition to his length of service, Doctor Robertson endeared himself to thousands of officers and their families by his kindly nature as well as by his professional skill of high order which was unsparingly given to all who needed his care, commanding Generals, officers of every rank, soldiers and civilians for over sixty

years of service, during three epidemics of cholera and two of yellow fever, besides the innumerable cases, surgical and medical, that were submitted to his skillful treatment.

While Doctor Robertson was retired with full pay he remained on active duty almost to the time of his death in 1918.

Doctor Robertson and his wife lived for many years in their cottage near the Chapel in the midst of an old-fashioned garden that was one of the sights of Governors Island. Mrs. Robertson was the daughter of Lieutenant Michael Moore, who was born July 4, 1800, and enlisted in 1812 for the War. He retired in 1871 as 1st Lieutenant after many years of meritorious service on Governors Island and died at the age of 97 years.

Thus these two officers in one family represent in their own persons 123 years of active service.

The following Order was issued for the funeral of Sergeant Robertson:

HEADQUARTERS EASTERN DEPARTMENT,
Governors Island, N. Y.
August 15, 1918.

The funeral service for the late David Robertson, Sergeant first class, Medical Department, will be held at St. Cornelius' Chapel, Governors Island, on Friday, August 16th, at 2 P. M.

* * * * * *

In view of the exceptionally long service of Sergeant Robertson of over 64 years on Governors Island, and his high personal character, it is thought that persons in the Garrison generally would be glad to have this opportunity of paying their respects to his memory.

W. A. SIMPSON,
Colonel, Retired, Adjutant.

DR. DAVID ROBERTSON

A Tribute from One Who Loved Him

On Aug. 13, 1918, there passed from this world the spirit of one who had been for so many years a figure of the life of Governors Island that the community was for the moment startled as if the impossible had taken place. Generations of men and women had come and gone and that skilful attendant, that kindly friend, remained to link the old and new. Who that ever knew David Robertson can forget him? He was not like the rest. He was not the average man. He seemed to be somewhat apart, yet no man who ever lived was more interested in his fellow men and few were more ready and able to do their part in making the world better for his life in it. The secret of Dr. Robertson's long life and the esteem of his fellows was the same, a serene and sane belief in his duty to God and man.

Born in Edinburgh, Scotland, in March, 1833, David Robertson came as a young man to this country and in the spring of 1854 enlisted in the Army. And here all these long years he has been, a faithful, loyal, efficient officer, who not only never failed in any duty, however small, but who never failed to do more than his duty. During the years of the Civil War he was on many occasions the druggist, doctor and surgeon, all in one. The first year of his service on Governors Island saw the cholera epidemic; this was followed by plagues of the same disease in 1857, 1866, 1867 and 1868. The hospital was overcrowded with the sick and dying and all his skill and strength and patience were called into requisition as the number of physicians was never equal to the needs of the situation. Many patients were treated in the houses in which they were when they were seized. In 1856 came the yellow fever and in 1870 the great visitation of the yellow fever in which there were 172 cases in one month, when there were thirty-three cases in one set of quarters out of forty and the island was quarantined against itself. Dr. Robertson often spoke to the writer of these times, but with characteristic

modesty failed to mention the self-sacrificing part he took in the work of caring for the victims. Such things were to him but incidental to the discharge of duty.

In the early days of Dr. Robertson's life on Governors Island came the romance of his life. Michael Moore was in command of the "Music Boys," as they were called in those days. They were stationed in the South Battery, and what more natural than that David Robertson and Mary Moore should meet, and meeting, marry? Thus began the long and happy married life in the little cottage by the chapel, whose garden still speaks of the skilful care of Mrs. Robertson and from which came every morning the bit of bright geranium that decorated the doctor's buttonhole as he went off to the dispensary. His father-in-law, born on July 4, 1800, must have had the feeling of the day in his blood, for he entered the Army in 1812 for the war and, retiring in 1878, lived to the good old age of 97. Thus these two persons represented in one family 123 years of active service in the Army of the United States.

But it is not only for length of service that Dr. Robertson stands conspicuous. His private life was as exemplary as his military career was flawless. There was a certain fineness about him that defied analysis. All who came in contact with him felt it. The reserve was that of a man who was sure of himself. The modesty was that of a man who had not one grain of overconfidence. The result was a combination as rare as it is beautiful. He was filled with the spirit of charity. He never spoke ill; he ever spoke well, of his fellows. Without a suggestion of cant, he was religious. He did not wear his religion on his sleeve, but it was always where it could be drawn as a trusty sword. During the long weeks of illness when the writer ministered to him, his real delight in the prayers and acts of devotion was touching in its simplicity and reality.

So passed away a soul of fineness after length of days and active military service seldom, if ever, equalled in the military annals of this or any other land. But best of all is the service and record he has sent before him, more precious

and important even than that he has left behind. It should be an inspiration to men of every age and rank to look upon the record of David Robertson, soldier and Christian gentleman, and to realize that our country, our Army and the world at large, in peace or war, are the better for his life and example.

Requiescat in pace.

EDMUND BANKS SMITH,
Chaplain, Governors Island.

The little group of Lombardy poplar trees still left which remained (1917) at the edge of the Arsenal Yard is a reminder of a forest that adorned Manhattan and Governors Island 100 years ago and should be viewed with the respect due to the survivors of an ancient race. The poplar was largely used in the 18th century for the beautifying of the city. Guernsey tells us in his book, "New York in the War of 1812," that Broadway was literally lined with them on both sides from Bowling Green to Sailors' Snug Harbour (10th Street) and that they were found along the streets and lanes of the City and in the door-yards of the homes. Paintings of that period show Governors Island with a lordly crown of stately poplars from its Eastern to its Western end, notably the "Wall View," by Wm. C. Wall, 1823. Another view by Wall, painted in 1820, shows Castle Williams with the surf breaking at its base and a sentry in uniform of the 1812 period. Drawings and paintings of Governors Island by Chapman, Wood, Howell, Stubbs, Stevenson and Bachman in the 30's and 40's also show the long regimental line of poplars now shrunken to the dimensions of a squad, but well worth notice, both for their dignified beauty and for the story they tell us of the days when old New York was young. John W. Francis in his "Old New York" says the Lombardy Poplar was found in great abundance in 1800-1805 and that it was introduced in New

York under direction of Louis XVI, who sent out the elder Michaux from the Jardin des Plantes accompanied by a gardener, Paul Sanier, who spread the poplar everywhere.

NAME OF THE MAIN FORT

The old name of Jay, which had been discontinued about the year 1810, was restored in 1904, according to the following order:

General Orders.
No. 18

WAR DEPARTMENT,
WASHINGTON, January 25, 1904.

The following order is published to the Army for the information and guidance of all concerned—

WAR DEPARTMENT,
WASHINGTON, January 20, 1904.

The fortification on Governor's Island, New York Harbor, partly built 1794-1795, enlarged and completed 1798-1801, and partly rebuilt 1806-1808, now known as Fort Columbus, is hereby restored to its original name of Fort Jay; and the said fortification and the Military post located on the said Island will hereafter be known and designated as Fort Jay.

ELIHU ROOT,
Secretary of War.

The change of name from Jay to Columbus is supposed to have been due to Jay's temporary unpopularity with the Republican party, which was not satisfied with the Jay Treaty with England (1794). The treaty, however, proved its value, and Jay was twice elected Governor of New York after its adoption.

The restoration of the original name is a graceful recognition of the splendid character of the man of whom Daniel Webster said: "When the spotless ermine of the judicial robe fell on John Jay it touched nothing less spotless than itself."

THE MILITARY SERVICE INSTITUTION OF THE UNITED STATES

This Organization was incorporated according to the laws of New York State in June, 1884, for "literary, historical and scientific purposes and by the establishment of a museum, publishing of essays, etc., to promote the military interests of the United States".

There were 28 Directors, including General Winfield Scott Hancock, President, and Genl. Theophilus F. Rodenbough, Secretary.

Among others in the list of Directors were James B. Fry, Wesley Merritt, Asa Bird Gardner, Alexander S. Webb, John H. Janeway, William D. Whipple, John Hamilton, J. Estcourt Sawyer, Alexander J. Perry, Robert Catlin and George F. Price.

The most important works of the Institution were the establishment of the museum and the publication of the Military Service Institution Journal. The Journal, under the

able direction of General Rodenbough, Secretary and Editor for many years, and later of General Allison, Secretary and Editor, was a publication of high order and importance and occupied a position of great usefulness to the Army at large.

With the establishment of the various Service Journals, the death of General Allison, and the increased cost of publi-

Sheridan's Famous Charger "Winchester"

cation it was found necessary to discontinue its publication, although the Reeve Memorial Prize Essay continued for a time to be offered, and may still continue, if thought advisable.

The Museum for many years occupied part of the Clock Tower Building (shown in accompanying picture), where the office of the Secretary was also situated. In 1917 the

space was required by the Chief of Ordnance and the exhibits were stored. In 1922 the Smithsonian Institution applied for the collection of military objects and the Council transferred the collection to that Institution on the ground that it would be of value to a vast number of people, whereas its usefulness here was greatly limited.

WINCHESTER

Among the many objects thus transferred the most picturesque was the famous charger, Winchester. At the time of the transfer of the Museum to Washington it was realized that Winchester had been on Governors Island for 44 years and it seemed appropriate to observe his departure with some ceremony. The Secretary of the Institution therefore arranged a function for the "cheering" of the gallant steed and the various Grand Army Posts of New York were invited to assemble to give him a farewell. Large numbers came to the ceremony, which was held in the open near the Boat landing, among them being many who had enlisted on Governors Island in 1861 and several who were in the Battle of Cedar Creek. An extract from the programme follows:

Music—"Civil War Melodies"..22nd Infantry Band, Ft. Jay

Welcome to the Grand Army

Major General Robert Lee Bullard, U. S. A.
Commanding 2nd Corps Area

Address by a Comrade of the Grand Army of the Republic.

Recitation—"Sheridan Twenty Miles Away"

by Master Bertram Isaacs,
Grandson of the Department Commander, G. A. R.

Cheering of WINCHESTER

Music . . . . . 22nd Infantry Band

WINCHESTER was presented to General Sheridan by the Officers of the Second Michigan Cavalry at Rienzi, Mississippi, in 1862.

He was of Black Hawk blood and was foaled in 1859. General Sheridan said of him that he was an animal of immense strength and endurance, always holding his head high and of great quickness in movement. In spite of his power and speed he could be controlled at any time by a firm hand and a few words. Under fire he was as cool and quiet as any of the General's old soldiers. As a horse for field service it is believed his superior never existed.

WINCHESTER took part in fifty battles and engagements from 1862 to 1865 and died in 1878. He was mounted at Ward's in Rochester, and brought to Governors Island in that year, where he has been ever since in the museum of the Military Service Institution of the United States. He is now about to be transferred by the Military Service Institution to the Smithsonian Institution in Washington.

General Sheridan's famous ride on WINCHESTER was made at the battle of Cedar Creek on October 19, 1864.

The officers of the Military Service Institution (1922) are:

President, MAJ.-GEN. LEONARD WOOD, U. S. A.

Resident Vice-Presidents:

BRIG.-GEN. GEORGE T. BARTLETT, U. S. A.

MAJ.-GEN. JOHN F. O'RYAN, N. G. N. Y.

Secretary & Treasurer,

CHAPLAIN EDMUND BANKS SMITH, O. R. C.

BUTTERMILK CHANNEL

Its Original Name

The question of the early condition of what we now call Buttermilk Channel has been for many years an interesting

one. References to the matter appear in the Peter Jay Original Letters (New York Historical Society). Peter Jay was the Father of John Jay. The date of these letters was about 1750.

"Marabie Bevois says she is aged 84 years (near 85), was born in New York. It's last May 63 years since she came to live at Brookland (Brooklyn). Heard Jeromus Remsen's mother say that there was only a small creek between Nutten Island and the shoar and that a squah carried her sister over it in a tub."

"Joost Van Brunt aged 77 years and upwards, born and lived at New Utrecht—says he was about seven years old when the Dutch came to take New York—says that a great deal of the land's washed away against Nutten Island and it went further out than now but can't say how much. Jeromus Remsen aged 77 years says that he heard his mother say she was carried off Nutten Island by a squah and that it was all sedge and meadow, only a creek between Nutten Island and Long Island; it is now 116 or 117 years since his mother was born; has often heard people say that there was but a small creek between Nutten and Long Island."

This story must be considered in connection with the fact that there was a small creek in the rear of Red Hook, just opposite the Island, which may easily have been mistaken for the Channel. All surveys from 1765 to 1784 show from 3 to 7 fathoms of water in the Channel. *K. N.*

"A Mr. Van Alstine, upwards of eighty years of age in 1786, said he remembered when Governors Island was separated from Long Island only by a narrow creek, which was crossed upon logs raised above the high tide."

The Minutes of the Common Council of New York furnish this early reference to Nutten (later, Governors) Island, which indicate that at that time it was so slightly separated from the main land as to serve as a point of reference for the main shore line. Otherwise the Red Hook line would have been mentioned.

Report of the Committee appointed for "enquiring into the Ancient Rights and Privileges of this Citty"—was read in the words following (vizt.)

NEW YORK, Jan. Ye 24th 1698 (9).

We have viewed And Examined the Records of the Citty and doe find * * * that all that Land from Ye Eastern End of Nutten Island for half A Mile deep to Ye West point of Ye Wallabout," &c.—

In the Colonial Documents (London) we read of this period that in 1691

"Governor Sloughter arrived in New York in the Ship "Arch Angell" in March, the troop ship having arrived two months before. The officers of the two foot companies demanded entrance into their Matyes Fort of the Cittey but were denied entrance by Jacob Leisler with the Stile of Lieut Governour. * * *

* * * * * *

The Sd Leisler fortified himself in ye Fort and had 16 or 17 bullets in ye fire Red hott to fire ye towne withall.

The Noyze and Shouting yt followed upon ye Govr's landing (being come in ye pinnas by the back side of Nutten Island) made the hearts of his followers to divide," &c.

Nearly one hundred years later General Scott wrote as follows to John Jay, son of the Peter Jay whose Original Letters are above quoted relative to Buttermilk Channel:

NEW YORK, 6th September, 1776.

* * * * * *

We are liable every moment to have the communication between us and the City cut off by the entrance of frigates into the East River between Governor's Island and Long Island, which General McDougall assured us from his own nautical experience was very feasible.

* * * * * *

Later, same date.

* * * * * *

The Garrison was drawn off in the afternoon after our retreat under fire of shipping which are now drawn up just behind Governor's Island and the fire of some cannon from the Long Island Shore, but with no other loss than that of one man's arm.

Watson's Annals state that "an old gentleman in 1828 remembers that as late as 1786 the Buttermilk Channel was deemed unsafe for boats to pass through it because of numerous rocks there. It was, however, secured for a boat channel through which boats with milk and buttermilk usually made their passage. My mother told me that when she first entered New York Harbour (then a girl) she was surprised to see all the market boats in the East River rowed by robust women, their heads fitted with close caps, two women to an oar carry Long Island buttermilk to market.

The name of this important Channel is undoubtedly derived from the use of it by the market women.

Also the same authority states of Nutten Eylandt that it was formerly nearly joined to Long Island by a low intervening morass and a small dividing creek and that cattle passed to and fro at low water.

Mr. James Le Baron Willard of Brooklyn writes to the author: "I do not like to give up the idea which I have held

as a truth since childhood of 'crossing the channel' told by those whose word was well worthy of credence. It may be the tales were but traditions so often told that they became accepted as facts. However, I *know* that our Bay tides were very much lower formerly than now."

There seems to be strong consensus of opinion among residents of Brooklyn Borough that the Channel was fordable at an early period. Mr. Charles B. Pearson, a gentleman in his 90th year, writes to Mr. Willard on the subject. He says his father in law John Davidson was born in 1802 and was a Trinity Church school boy and chorister and that he had often told the writer of wading across from Brooklyn to Governors Island through mud and over the stones—that he used to skate from the Battery on the Hudson to Canal Street, the main inlet, and along the inlet to Broadway and under a stone bridge to the present Tombs prison. In those days Water Street, as its name indicates, was on the East River front. Now, there are two streets east of it, thus narrowing the River there as the Atlantic Docks later did east of the Island and deepening the channel to a considerable extent. The excavations for the Atlantic Docks were made in 1842 and at a depth of 20 feet many roots of trees were found and beneath them peat was discovered in considerable quantities.

Other old residents of Brooklyn recall that the tides in the Buttermilk Channel were formerly less high than now; and that the Red Hook flats were not filled in until after 1846. These facts, coupled with the building of the Atlantic Docks opposite the Island and subsequent dredging of the Channel, would easily explain the present navigable conditions of the Channel. A resident of Governors Island told the author that she walked half across the Channel in 1849. This was with the use of stepping stones at low tide.

It is difficult to reconcile the foregoing statements *in toto* without fuller knowledge of conditions. For example, we have the statement that in (about) 1630 it was a small creek and that a "squah carried a child over in a tub"; that it was crossed in 1710 by "logs raised above the high tide"; that the "pinnas of the 'Arch Angell' came to the back side in 1691"; that the British frigates (or shipping of war) were drawn up "just behind Governors Island" in 1776; that it was "full of rocks and unsafe" in 1786; that John Davidson, born in 1802, "waded across as a boy," probably in 1812, and that the "fort to guard the pass at Buttermilk Channel was completed and equipped" in March, 1813.

From the building of the fort in 1813 the obvious conclusion is that it was navigable for ships of war, as Genl. Scott intimates in his letter to John Jay in 1776, and yet statements of most undoubted veracity are made from 1630 to 1812 that it was a sedgy creek, a fordable stream, a crossing for cattle, a wading place for children.

Probably the safest conclusion in absence of positive information is that local conditions varied with the years and that it may have been possible to cross it occasionally under exceptional conditions of wind and tide, as the falls of Niagara under certain conditions of ice formation may be crossed by the daring adventurer. Of one thing we may be certain, viz, that the sedge marsh of the 17th century is today a highly important artery in the commercial system of the Port of New York with a channel 1000 feet wide at the narrowest point and a depth of 30 feet. The Navy Department sends large battleships now through Buttermilk Channel, in striking contrast with the wooden Dreadnaughts of 1776, and it is planned to increase the Channel to a depth of 35 feet, as it affords a more direct route from the Navy Yard to the sea. The encircling sea wall was built at different periods in the

development of the Island—the S. W. portion in 1866, and the N. portion from the Castle to the Arsenal at a later period by F. Hopkinson Smith, Engineer, Artist and Author.

South Battery

We learn from the Tompkins papers that a fort existed at an early period to defend Buttermilk Channel (p. 88). A plan of the fortifications of New York in 1814 in Lossing's Field Book of the Revolution shows a considerable work at the South Battery. This corresponds closely with this order and with the fact that repairs were ordered for the South Battery in 1832.

CHAPTER VI.

The Governors Island Ferry in Four Centuries. 1600-1900

It is a long cry from the Indian canoe of prehistoric times and the colonial barge of Wouter Van Twiller in 1637 to the "General Otis" of to-day; from the *Pagganck Island* of the aborigines and the *Nutten Island* of the Dutch and the *Governors Island* as it began to be called in the time of Charles II

of England, to the Corps Area and Regimental Headquarters of the United States Army of 1922. With little imagination one can see the gliding canoe of the red men putting out from its wooded shores, and at a later period the thick-prowed yawl of the Dutch occupation, succeeded again after 1674 by the stately barge of the English Colonial Governors.

How busy our little port must have been when the famous sawmill was built in 1639, and again when it was burned in 1647 "to save the Iron!" How our shores must have resounded to the tramp of visiting thousands during the days of the racetrack, in the time it was used as quarantine for immi-

grants by the act of June 13, 1710, and subsequent periods, especially when the ten thousand Palatines were detained here before being sent to populate Columbia and Greene Counties! What stirring scenes during the erection of Castle Williams, with landing of stores and supplies, and the feverish building of the original Fort Jay, when professors and students of Columbia College came down with their shovels and picks to help the workmen complete the fort!

How the English Governors Hardy, De Lancey, Colden, Moore, Dunmore and Tryon crossed over in the days when our Island served as their official residence, the "Smiling Garden of the Sovereigns of the Province," as an old historian calls it, we do not know, but one can imagine the dignified barges of that period, with their passengers of official importance and the pleasant social activities which they served much as our Quartermaster transports do to-day.

In 1732 appeared in Parker's "Post Boy" the following advertisement:

"On Monday the 2nd of October next will be exposed for sale at Publick Vendue a large fine barge with Awning and Damask Curtains, two sets of oars, sails and everything that is necessary for her. She now lies in the Dock and did belong to the late Governor Montgomerie."

The following orders throw light upon the subject of later English Colonial transportation:

COMMON COUNCIL,
CITY HALL, Nov. 8, 1756.

No. (1346) Warrant issued.

Ordered that Mr. Recorder issue his warrant to the Treasurer of this City to pay the further sum of twenty-eight pound, sixteen shillings, and five pence in full for the Government Tax * * * of the ferry (to Governor's Island).

GOVERNORS ISLAND BARGE AND CREW

ABOUT 1860

The latest use of the term "Nutten" vice "Governor's" the author has found contained in the MSS. Minutes of the Common Council of the City of New York under date of May 5, 1794, in which John Hillyer is authorized to keep the Ferry to Nutten Island for one year and is enjoined to provide "good boats." He is allowed to "receive three pence for each passenger and to carry fatigue parties free."

FROM MSS. MINUTES OF COMMON COUNCIL.

Monday the 22nd June, 1795.

The Committee on the subject of a ferry from this City to Governor's Island made a verbal report on the subject—

Whereupon it was ordered that it be referred to the Committee for directing public works on Governor's Island, to make such arrangements for the establishing of a safe and convenient ferry from this City to said Island as they shall judge most proper, and that the keeper of the said ferry be allowed to demand and receive from each person (except such as shall be employed at the Public Works and the Troops of the Garrison there) six pence for going and six pence for returning.

The earliest known mention of steam service is found in the *Commercial Advertiser* of August 9th, 1844.

"The pretty little iron Steamer 'Ida' is to be put upon the route between the Battery and Governors Island early next week. We understand the 'Ida' has been invited upon this route by Officers of the Garrison (who will grant every opportunity to view the Fortifications). * * * The delightful band will afford no slight attraction by its performances.

2nd Arty, Colonel James Bankhead
Commanding."

K. N.

Coming down to modern times we are reminded of the Civil War period when the Castle was filled to overflowing with prisoners and when at one time seven regiments were encamped within our limited borders. One who was living here at the time describes the scenes in those days as being stirring in the extreme. The Wisconsin regiment marched on the Island 1,200 strong and made a particularly fine appearance, and the scene at Retreat from the parapets of Fort Jay, with seven regiments, seven bands and seven separate functions going on at once is described as having been a thrilling spectacle.

About ten years before the Civil War the recruiting depot was transferred from Governors to Bedlow's Island. This was before the advent of the steam ferry and the difficulties encountered by all who had occasion to visit either Post may be gathered from the recorded mention of the movements to and fro of the Reverend John McVickar, D. D., Chaplain of Governors Island from 1844 to 1862, as found in Dr. Dix's History. He says (p. 9 of his book): "Transit was effected by open barges. In all seasons of the year, in stormy or fair weather, on Sundays and when required on week days, the venerable Chaplain might be seen making his journeys from the Battery to the two Islands, visiting the permanent garrison at Governors Island and the recruits at Bedlow's; and in the most bitter winter's cold, sitting in the stern sheets, wrapped in his military cloak, as the oarsmen pushed their way through drift ice in the bay and against the strong tides off the Battery." This transfer of recruits to Bedlow's Island was only temporary.

During Dr. McVickar's Chaplaincy there was no steam service between the Island and the City. All communication was by barge at all seasons of the year, the Government landing being at Castle Garden, now the Aquarium in New York

City, which at that time was connected with the Battery by a bridge-way.

Such adverse circumstances were met daily by the members of the Garrison in the winter months.

A lady who made her home with an officer's family on Governors Island remembers distinctly the barge in which she used to travel to and from the City in visiting the Island seventy-seven years ago. It was similar in general appearance to the launches now used by the Navy and had a close-fitting canvas cover.

Great were the difficulties of passage for those on pleasure bent in cold and storm and darkness, but, as she recalls, greater still was the difficulty of remembering the countersign without which no one was admitted within the frowning draw-bridge gate of Fort Jay, where in those days all the officers' families resided.

It is interesting to note that the Barge Office at the Battery recalls by its title the fact that from the earliest days of the occupation of Governors Island by the Colonial Governors in the 17th Century to the Civil War of the 19th Century transportation with the mainland was effected by small boats and barges.

The first place of which we have record as a point of departure from the Battery was a landing just south of the Castle, later Castle Garden, now the municipal Aquarium. This was in 1854 and probably had served for very many years, as the Castle was until the Civil War period separated from the mainland by water and the land on which the present Barge Office now stands was not made until about the same period.

There were at this time two barges in service, similar to the one in the illustration, one the Commanding Officer's, and one for general service. These boats carried twelve passengers

each and were manned by a crew of six rowers in naval uniform, with a non-commissioned officer in command as coxswain. They made three trips a day each, the last one being at 5 P. M. in summer and 4 in winter. The landing-place on Governors Island was at a stairway just north of the present pier.

The Ordnance maintained its own boat, rowed by two men. There were in addition to these official barges a fleet of eight or ten small boats plying to Pacific Street, Brooklyn, which were found convenient for persons going to market. The fare on these boats was 12½ cents a trip. The late Captain James Feeney began his career in this service about the year 1860, and these private boats continued in service some time after the steamboat era.

During the contract period of transportation the price of passage was fifteen cents, return for twenty-five cents. School children received commutation rates of ten cents a day, and a late theatre boat cost fifteen dollars.

A striking contrast is presented in the following transportation orders to the way such matters are arranged now.

HEADQUARTERS MILITARY DIVISION OF THE ATLANTIC,
FEBRUARY 12, 1879.

GENERAL:

A number of Officers desire to attend a reception at the Army and Navy Club to night and on application of the Post Commander in their behalf I have in your name directed the "Atlantic" to make a trip tonight, leaving the Battery at 1 o'clock vice 12.

Yours truly,

(signed) JAMES B. FRY

TO MAJOR GENL HANCOCK

Very well. This is the way the thing can be done.

(signed) WINFIELD SCOTT HANCOCK

TO GENERAL J. B. FRY.

THE GENERAL OTIS"

1910

The family of the late Reverend E. H. C. Goodwin, Chaplain from 1871-1904, have in their possession an original order signed by General Hancock, as follows:

HEADQRS MILITARY DIVISION OF THE ATLANTIC
AND
DEPARTMENT OF THE EAST.

GOVERNOR'S ISLAND, N. Y.

To the A. A. G.— October 30, 1883.
or Captain Tug "Atlantic"—

Let there be an extra boat coming *this* way for Rev. Mr. Goodwin and party at 11:30 P. M. to-night.

W. SCOTT HANCOCK,
Major Gen., U. S. A.

(From Battery at 11:30 P. M.)

It was in 1861 that the steam vessels were first engaged regularly in the ferry service. The first boat was the "General Scott." This was succeeded by the "General McClellan," and that by the "Governor's Island." These were small vessels of the tugboat type. In 1878 the "Atlantic," a larger boat of the same type, was employed. The "Atlantic" was built for the Cunard Line to serve in Boston Harbour. "A soldier informed me it was purchased by the Government for about the value of a condenser." *K. N.*

At this time Headquarters of the Department were established on the Island, and with this boat, or possibly earlier with the "Governor's Island," a Government contract was made and persons using them were not required to pay ferriage. At first, and for some time, the steamers ran only till dark. This service has been gradually improved till the present admirable schedule of a boat every half hour from an early hour till 1 A. M. has been reached.

The "Madden," a small tugboat, owned by Sergeant Gubbins and a man named McKitchie, ran from 1870 to about

1873, when its owners sold it and bought the "Governor's Island," which was used for about five years. The fare on this boat was twenty-five cents the round trip.

In 1898 a great improvement was inaugurated in the building of the "General Hancock," a vessel on ferry-boat lines, which has done good work for fifteen years.

The "Col. Wikof" served as an auxiliary boat for about twelve years, and there have been various launches of late years for the use of the Department Commander, the present one, the "Lieutenant Ward Cheney," being a beautiful specimen of marine architecture. In 1910 the "General Otis" took the place of the "General Hancock" as the transport between Governors Island and the Battery. This boat, with its larger cabins, more ample decks and accommodations for horses, carriages, wagons and motor cars, gives better service than has ever been enjoyed before, and in the fourth century of the history of the Governors Island ferry points to the future of the enlarged Post and populous Garrison that is to be. The official figures given by the Chief Quartermaster's Office for transportation of passengers between Governors Island and the Battery on the Q. M. Steamers "General Hancock" and "General Otis" for the month of April, 1913, state the number as 45,999. This is considered an average month.

A new landing has been made on the north side of the Island near the Quartermaster Storehouse. With this in service the time of transit will be reduced.

The accompanying illustration of the barge is the only one known to exist, and is taken from a photograph belonging to the late Captain James Feeney, who served, with great faithfulness, forty-nine years, boy and man, in the transportation of the Governors Island Garrison to and from the City.

Captain Wm. Gray Loring served in the Government transportation service for over 40 years, of which 4 were spent in Boston Harbour and the rest in the Governors Island service. There are few officers of long service in the Army who did not know Capt. Loring and all who know him recall with pleasure his genial character, his fund of deep-sea yarns and his attachment to the friends he has made on his countless trips across the salt highway.

Captains Moore and Fagan have been in the ferry service for many years and are highly esteemed for their faithful and efficient work, the boat now running 18 hours out of the 24, and having an annual mileage of about 27,000 miles.

During the years 1917 and 1918 the regular ferry service was augmented by two large boats plying to the north dock. These boats carried in the peak of their service 300,000 passengers a month, counting return, and a vast number of trucks to supplement the railway traffic.

CHAPTER VII.

The New York Arsenal

In Vol. I of "Ordnance Reports" Colonel Decius Wadsworth of the Ordnance in a letter to the Secretary of War dated Nov. 13, 1812, relative to the duties of the Ordnance Department as a "new Establishment" and of needed stations says:

"The present establishment at New York may be continued on a reduced scale as subordinate for the purpose of supplying the seaboard with such articles as a laboratory can most conveniently furnish."

During the War of 1812 Governors Island was the scene of great military activity, but whether the laboratory mentioned above was in New York City or on the Island cannot be definitely determined from the records here.

Colonel Wadsworth in another letter to the Secretary of War dated February 8, 1816, says: * * *

"The laboratory near New York will suffice for supplying Maritime posts." * * * Whether this refers to a place on Governors Island cannot be determined from the context. It is possible the reference is to one of the Arsenals in the City.

In June, 1812, as we learn from Guernsey, there was a United States Arsenal on Bridge Street, back of Government House, near the Battery. This was of brick and was considered a good work for the locality. There was also a three-story brick magazine near it.

The United States also held a plot of 2 acres on the Hudson River at the foot of West 12th Street on which were a magazine, arsenal and laboratory. The laboratory was surrounded

by a brick wall 9 feet high. Fort Gansevoort was erected later upon this site.

Another U. S. Arsenal was at the junction of the old Boston Road and Middle Road (now Madison Square), in the grounds laid out for the Parade in 1811. This Arsenal was built by State appropriation with the expectation that the United States would repay. The Parade contained 238 7/10 acres and extended from 23d to 34th Street and from 7th Avenue to 3rd Avenue. It was used for military exercises and for a place to assemble the forces destined to guard the City.

In April, 1814, it was reduced to 89 1/10 acres; later to less than 7 acres, the present Madison Square.

On page 68, Vol. I of "Ordnance Reports," referred to above, will be found a "Statement of the battering cannon, mortars, howitzers, shots, shells and carriages not in service, deposited in the several arsenals and depots in the United States." A statement is given there of the number of each stored at "Arsenal, New York City." This is under date of January 29, 1822, and refers, no doubt, to an ordnance storage yard on Governors Island.

The Arsenal may be said to have been definitely started when buildings were commenced here in 1833 under an appropriation made by Congress, the work being carried out by an Engineer Officer, Captain J. L. Smith, Captain of Engineers, under direction of the Chief of Ordnance. The buildings were paid for by the Ordnance Department.

The Commanding Officer's quarters and quarters No. 2 were erected in 1839 and enlarged in 1852. Quarters No. 3 were built in 1884. The old office was built in 1853, the new (present) office in 1860. The seven other buildings were erected between 1835 and 1904. A fire engine was maintained in service on the Arsenal Reservation from 1867 till 1910,

when salt water mains were installed for the entire Island. An old Engineer map of the Arsenal marks a *pump* at a point near the S. E. corner of the store-house connected with the commanding officer's quarters. This probably represents the spring house described on p. 129.

In 1878 the Military Service Institution was formed, with General Winfield Scott Hancock as its head. The Institution was located on Governors Island, where it established its headquarters, with library and museum. For many years it was housed in the building known as the "Clock Tower Building," in which the late Brig.-Gen. T. F. Rodenbough, Secretary and Editor, and the late Brig.-Gen. James N. Allison, Secretary and Editor, had their offices.

The area of the Arsenal is about 6½ acres.

A list of commanding officers, from 1831 to the present day, follows:

Store Keepers and Commanding Officers

New York Arsenal

NAME OF OFFICERS	RANK	ASSUMED COMMAND
Samuel Perkins	M. S. Keeper	Dec. 31, 1831
S. H. Weber	M. S. Keeper	Nov. 11, 1834
Samuel Perkins	M. S. Keeper	April 5, 1835
J. A. J. Bradford	Capt. O. D.	Sept. 15, 1835
Geo. D. Ramsey	Capt. O. D.	Oct. 1, 1836
L. L. Van Kleeck	M. S. Keeper	Nov. 9, 1836
J. F. Lee	Lt. Cps. Engrs.	Oct. 11, 1837
Geo. H. Talcott	Lt. O. D.	Oct. — 1838
I. A. D'Laguel	Capt. O. D.	Mar. 27, 1839
L. L. Van Kleeck	M. S. Keeper	May 21, 1840
W. A. Thornton	Capt. O. D.	July 2, 1840
Geo. H. Talcott	Bvt. Lt.-Col. O. D.	July 31 1849
W. A. Thornton	Bvt. Major O. D.	Oct. 1, 1851
R. H. K. Whiteley	Capt. O. D.	Nov. 20, 1854

NAME OF OFFICERS	RANK	ASSUMED COMMAND
W. A. Thornton	Bvt. Major O. D.	May 31, 1858
R. H. K. Whiteley	Capt. O. D.	May 14, 1861
R. A. Wainwright	Major O. D.	Oct. 23, 1862
Silas Crispin	Capt. O. D.	Apr. 14, 1864
A. R. Buffington	Capt. O. D.	July 12, 1864
W. A. Thornton	Col. O. D.	June 19, 1865
C. Bryant	Lieut. O. D.	Apr. 6, 1866
T. T. S. Laidley	Maj. O. D.	May 15, 1866
Silas Crispin	Lt.-Col. O. D.	Apr. 10, 1871
T. G. Baylor	Maj. O. D.	June 10, 1876
G. W. McKee	Maj. O. D.	July 17, 1883
T. G. Baylor	Col. O. D.	Oct. 3, 1883
Chas. Shaler	Capt. O. D.	May 15, 1885
A. Mordecai	Lt.-Col. O. D.	May 25, 1886
J. McAllister	Col. O. D.	July 1, 1886
A. Mordecai	Lt.-Col. O. D.	Dec. 30, 1886
Chas. Shaler	Capt. O. D.	Mar. 28, 1887
A. Mordecai	Lt.-Col. O. D.	Apr. 16, 1887
J. E. Greer	Capt. O. D.	Dec. 11, 1889
A. Mordecai	Lt.-Col. O. D.	Dec. 17, 1889
G. Comly	Maj. O. D.	Feby. 9, 1892
Frank Heath	Capt. O. D.	Apr. 19, 1894
F. H. Phipps	Maj. O. D.	May 18, 1894
John G. Butler	Maj. O. D.	June 10, 1899
J. W. Reilly	Lt.-Col. O. D.	Sept. 13, 1900
J. E. Greer	Lt.-Col. O. D.	Aug. 1, 1903
R. Birnie	Lt.-Col. O. D.	Sept. 19, 1907
O. B. Mitcham	Lt.-Col. O. D.	Oct. 1, 1907 to April 1, 1919
Selby H. Frank	Maj. O. D.	to April 29, 1919
Gibert	Lt.-Col. O. D.	to Sept. 15, 1919
Selby H. Frank	Lt.-Col. O. D.	to May 1, 1920

The New York Arsenal has a charm and interest all its own, with its well-situated quarters, its groups of offices, its trees and walks and splendid views of the City, its towering buildings, the harbour, rivers and bridges. The records of

Store Keepers and Commanding Officers herewith given for a period of 89 years are exact and the author is indebted for these and for the dates of the buildings to Colonel Orin B. Mitcham, Commanding Officer, Ordnance Department, from 1907-1919.

In Feb. 1920, instructions were received from the War Department to move all Ordnance material from New York Arsenal to Raritan Arsenal, Metuchen, N. J., and to turn over the buildings and grounds of New York Arsenal to the Commanding General, 2nd Corps Area. In accordance with these instructions, about 200 carloads of Ordnance material were moved from New York Arsenal to Raritan Arsenal. Most of the old personnel of New York Arsenal were also transferred to Raritan Arsenal and on May 1st the Ordnance Department abandoned this station and turned over the buildings and grounds to the Commanding General, 2nd Corps Area. Lieut.-Colonel Frank was in command of New York Arsenal at the time these instructions were received, and he directed its abandonment and the movement to Raritan Arsenal; also the consolidation of the two arsenals, Raritan and New York Arsenal, assuming command of Raritan Arsenal.

CHAPTER VIII.

Religious Work and Influence

The earliest mention of religious ministration on Governors Island, beyond the occasional services of the Church of England held for Colonel Prescott's Regiment in 1776, is in connection with the Reverend John McVickar, D. D., Chaplain of Governors Island from 1844-1862.

Dr. McVickar was a resident of the City of New York, a man of culture and distinction in literary and church circles, and at that time professor of moral and intellectual philosophy, belles-lettres, political economy, and the evidences of natural and revealed religion in Columbia College, a position which he filled with dignity and success. As he had already reached the age of fifty-five, his friends were fearful of the consequences of adding to his other duties those of an army chaplain; nay, strenuous efforts were made to persuade him to decline the offer. But remonstrance was in vain; Dr. McVickar was a devoted churchman and deeply interested in mission work, and had felt for a long time a warm and special interest in soldiers and all their concerns. He therefore promptly accepted the proffer of the Government, and, as the call came during vacation at the college, he entered on his duties without the loss of a day. For eighteen years (1844-62) he held that position, serving not merely with efficiency, but with what might be called an enthusiastic devotion to the work. It is recorded of him by his biographer that he declared that he would resign his professorship in Columbia rather than the chaplaincy with its hard work among the soldiers and its pay of $700 a year. He was obliged, however, to resign in 1862, at the age of seventy-five.

There was no chapel when Dr. McVickar came to Governors Island and he held services in fine weather in a little grove of trees near the present Colonel's Row. At other times he used one of the rooms of the Post Headquarters, which proved inconvenient to all concerned. He made requisitions for a chapel building, but without success.

He therefore set about building one himself, and with generous contributions from his own family and of friends whom he interested in the work and with substantial aid from Trinity Church, New York, which at that early date evinced an interest it has never ceased to hold, he gathered funds sufficient for the purpose.

The Commander-in-Chief, General Scott, was strongly interested in the plans and gave them the benefit of his influence for the good of the churchless garrison. The War with Mexico broke out during the period of the Chapel's erection, but it helped rather than hindered the work, and the little building, which Chaplain McVickar describes as "having the two elements of humility and reverence," was soon completed and was consecrated by the Rt. Reverend Wm. H. De Lancey on April 19, 1847.

Chaplain McVickar served with great faithfulness from 1844 to 1862, at which time the War Department insisted that the Chaplain, owing to war conditions, should reside on Governors Island. This was impossible in that day of limited transportation, and so with great regret he resigned his position and devoted the remainder of his active life to his College duties.

Chaplain McVickar was born in New York the 10th of August, 1787, and died in 1868, six years after giving up his much-loved duties on Governors Island.

Inasmuch as he was the founder of religious work and influence here, it may not be deemed amiss to mention some

matters of interest connected with his life and work in and for the Garrison taken from his biography written by his son, William A. McVickar.

Speaking of Dr. McVickar's appointment by the Secretary of War upon the nomination of the Council of Administration of the Garrison of which Dr. Joseph Pynchon Russell, Post Surgeon, was a member, in 1844, his biographer says:

"My father had now reached his fifty-sixth year; a time of life when most men, if they do not think of rest, do still hesitate about adding to their work. Yet we find him this year accepting the chaplaincy of Fort Columbus in the harbor of New York.

He had always been fond of parochial work, and was not only ever ready to assist his brother clergymen, but constantly went out of his way to do so; generally singling out those, whether young or old, who he had reason to believe were over-worked. A friend and relative knowing his feelings in this respect, and being also acquainted with the officers of this Post, mentioned his name and secured his appointment. This unexpected proffer of missionary work, for it was really such, the performance of which was rendered possible by residence at the post not being required, came during the college vacation, and my father accepted it at once."

On first entering upon his duties, the chaplain found no place set apart for public worship, except the large room used on week-days as Post Headquarters, and on several Sundays business requirements forced him to vacate even this and go to an inconvenient upper room for service. This quickly determined him to make an effort for a chapel, but he found the matter surrounded with apparently insurmountable difficulties. Government was not accustomed to build chapels; nor was it willing either to make an appropriation for the pur-

pose, nor to allow others, even if prepared, to build on government ground. But there was determined perseverance on the one side, and probably friends at court on the other; not least among the latter being the then commander-in-chief of the army, General Scott. The result was a lease from the government of about one hundred and fifty feet square, on the south side of the island, subject to the exigencies of war; and within the year, the completion of a most tasteful and church-like building of wood after my father's own plans, and from funds, given and collected by himself.

The war with Mexico breaking out at this time increased greatly the difficulties to be overcome. These were fully appreciated, as the following extract from a letter from an Army officer to the chaplain shows:

"To me, and I believe all of us, the interest of the Church is greatly enhanced by its erection in war times on the very scene of active preparation for distant service. It seems a happy omen of those times when war shall be known no more. That it is fairly erected and completed seems to me almost a miracle, and to you, dear sir, it must seem almost a creation. It has taught me a lesson in the power of faith and perseverance that I trust I shall never forget. Those of us who knew the peculiar and tormenting discouragements under which you labored, and which seemed to us insurmountable, cannot too highly appreciate a labor which not only benefits Governors Island but the whole army."

Another officer, writing from the far-off field of battle, says:

"I am much pleased to hear of your final and complete success in building a church on the Island, and shall place my small donation in your hands at the first good opportunity. May its hallowed walls echo back strains of pure devotion

from the hearts and lips of its fortunate attendants, and may its erection prove the means of turning many from the power of Satan unto God. If it shall be my privilege to return again to the United States, it will arouse no ordinary feelings of emotion in my heart to enter into the courts of our little sanctuary, and there to join the voice of prayer and praise to Him who is the God of dangers and of protection. Be so kind, my dear sir, in your next letter, as to describe its position and its form, even in details."

Fort Columbus from 1850 was the great recruiting depot of the army; the numbers, therefore, that came under the chaplain's notice in war times was greatly increased. As the common soldier is not generally considered very impressible, we may judge somewhat of the spiritual power of the work centering round this little chapel by knowing that it received several bequests from soldiers dying in the hospitals of Mexico. The circle of its influence was a large one. The regiments were often changed, and when they were, a practical symbolism was enlisted to give permanency to the spiritual impressions already made. The communicants among the commissioned officers were assembled by the chaplain and requested to choose a Bible text which should be the motto of their regiment, this was then inscribed, with proper device and color, on a metal shield, with the name of the regiment and solemnly hung on the walls of the chapel, a binding link to the absent, a suggestive subject of reflection to the present worshippers.

In July, 1849, writing to an absent son, my father says: "The little Church of St. Cornelius is growing in historic interest as well as beauty. The three successive commands of the Island have all their mementoes on its walls—texts selected by them with appropriate shields; and what is more

satisfactory yet, I never had better attendance from the officers."*

An interesting episode occurred after the close of the Mexican War in the encampment for a time on Governors Island of what was called the California Regiment of Colonel Stevenson. This was a semi-military colony, under government patronage, going to take practical possession of the newly acquired territory of California. The proposed expedition aroused all my father's clear-sighted zeal, both for the commonwealth and the Church. He saw how much of the future of California, civil and ecclesiastical, might depend on the character and moral impetus of these men. He knew that they were mostly adventurers, but he never doubted the germ of goodness within. He worked among them untiringly, and before they sailed—they were going by the six months' voyage round the Horn—he persuaded them to elect a chaplain, determine on daily prayers on shipboard, and take the nominal position at least of a God-fearing body. The American Bible Society and the New York Bible and Common Prayer Book Society were brought into requisition to enable him to make distribution to every man of a Bible and, to every one that desired it, a Prayer Book. This distribution was made the occasion of a farewell address, which, at the request of the officers, was printed and distributed among the men as a memento of home, for California was then a *terra incognita,* and felt to be, as it really was, very far away.

The request of the Committee of Officers for a copy of this farewell address, which was made at the distribution of Bibles and Prayer Books to the Regiment prior to its sailing for

* These shields are described on p. 195. When the new Chapel was built (1906) they were removed from the old Chapel, carefully mounted on oak and hung on the walls of the south transept, where they serve as a reminder of the devotion of Dr. McVickar and of the manly piety of the soldiers of his day and generation. *Requiescant omnes in pace.*

California and which was printed, is dated "Camp Polk, Governor's Island, 7th Reg't N. Y. U. S. A. Volunteers, Sept. 11th, 1846," and the Doctor's acknowledgment of the courtesy was dated the following day.

Of his ministrations among the sick, it is sufficient to say that he was faithful, and never allowed personal fear, and seldom personal weariness, to interpose a barrier. When the cholera was raging on Governors Island in 1849, he writes to an absent member of his family: "Dr. ..... I was with last night, who both for his own sake and that of his family, is very dear to me. I am afraid we shall lose him. It has terminated in cholera, which has carried off so many. I shall return to a sorrowing, perhaps desolute house, but God's will be done. It is painful beyond measure to lose, as I do, the mourners also, by their removal from my care and sympathy."

As I copy these lines, evidently written before breakfast, after an anxious night's visitation, and telling of the simple way in which the chaplain went in and out among his cholera sick, I am forcibly reminded of his devoted successor in the chaplaincy, the Revd. Alexander Davidson, the second chaplain from Trinity Church, who has but just laid down his young life, a sacrifice to the same sense of duty, as he went in and out among the sick soldiers, during the late prevalence of yellow fever on the island. His record as given by his commanding officer is a very noble one, and if imagination might be allowed to picture choice meetings in the spirit world, it would find here congenial material.

Many letters show the personal interest which my father took in the new recruits, especially those who had seen better days, and who, by misfortune or wrong-doing, had been induced to enlist in the army. Several, so situated, were through his influence at Washington freed from their enlist-

ment and restored to their friends. Foreigners also, who could neither speak nor write English, but who were well educated, and who from necessity had been forced to enlist, often found in the Latin tongue a means of communication which must have been to them a great comfort. * * *

The following letter, found among the Chaplain's papers, is an example of this, pathetic in its simplicity.

DOMINE PASTOR:

Quod tibi scribo, excusa me.

Te rogare volui ut curam haberes pro me Majorem optare ut me in Partem Permanentem transferret.

Simul curriculum vitæ meæ tibi refero ut de me judicare possis.

Filius Pastoris primarii Magdeburgiensis sum. In prima classe Gymnasii Latini Halbertstadiensis versatus sum.

Postea quinque annos mercator fui in quibus Collegium Carolinum Brunoswigii visitavi.

Capitanus in Bello Danico fui et infelix fortuna politicio me in hanc partem mundi translulit. Non amicum qui me novit habeo. Rogo ut tu meum optatum audias.

* CAROLUS ARMINIUS THRYHSSON.

---

* Translation—

REVEREND PASTOR:

Excuse me for troubling you with a letter.

I wish to ask you to be so very kind as to request the Major to transfer me to the Permanent Party.

I will now tell you something of my life so that you can judge what kind of man I am.

I am the Son of the Chief Pastor of the City of Magdeburg and a graduate in the highest class of the Latin Classical Academy of Halbertstadt (Prussia).

For five years after my graduation I was engaged in business during which time I attended the Caroline College at Brunswick.

I also served in the Army with rank of Captain in our war with Denmark and then by an unhappy turn of the wheel of fortune I find myself in this part of the world, unknown, without a friend to help me. I earnestly beg that you will hear this my prayer.

The "permanent party" referred to in the above was the permanent garrison of the Island, the members of which were not liable to be sent to distant posts, and had other privileges. Only the best men were put upon it and it was considered an honor as well as an advantage to belong to it.

These chaplaincy duties, running over a period of eighteen years, having commenced with one war, were destined to terminate with another. My father's feelings with regard to the War of the Rebellion are well expressed in the following few lines of a home letter:—

"April 17, 1861,—Our April has been stormy, but less so than our national affairs. It is a crisis I could never have believed in, and even now can scarcely realize; but it alters not our rule of life—duty and Christian hope. When earth is dark, we must look to Heaven for light. Civil war is upon us. It might, perhaps, have been avoided, but must now be met, and the Federal government supported at all hazards and any cost. We must now *conquer peace*. The interval, long or short, will be one of trials and self-denials such as we have not been accustomed to, but with a brave heart and God's Blessing we shall go through them."

Under the regulations then in force soldiers were required to attend divine service and on the sounding of the Church call were marched to and seated in the lower half of the Chapel. Those only were excused who were on duty that prevented or who could plead religious scruples. These, however, had to remain in quarters during divine service and have the Articles of War and Regulations read to them and some amusing tales are traditional from McVickar's time of men who after comparing the Regulations and the Chaplain's sermons decided in favour of the latter as the less of two evils.

The reader who has followed thus far this historical account will have observed that Governors Island is *sui generis*

in every department of its military and social activities. It will not be surprising, therefore, to find it so in its ecclesiastical relations.

Dr. McVickar was selected by the Post Council of Administration according to the regulations of 1838. In those days the pay of Chaplain was forty dollars a month, four rations per day, quarters and fuel, increased in 1849 to not to exceed sixty dollars a month, subject to the approval of the Post Council.

The Chaplaincy of Governors Island has remained during all succeeding years on the basis of its establishment in 1844, except that since 1868 the financial support of the Chaplain has been borne by the Trinity Church Corporation. This is somewhat analogous to the corps of Acting Post Chaplains in the British Army, of whom there are a number carried on the rolls in addition to the regular commissioned Chaplains. These have their regular parochial work but may be called upon, as reserves, by the War Department for special duty when their services are required. The arrangement in force at Governors Island is more favourable to the Government, however, as is also the status of the Chapel building, which is for the sole use of the Government in the persons of the Governors Island establishment, whereas in England and Germany today the Military Garrisons in most cases share a parish Church with the regular congregation, as, for instance, at Carlisle, where the author has been present at service on Sunday, the command from the Castle in the City marching in and occupying assigned sittings, the officers sitting in the choir stalls.

In Germany there are but a few Garrison Chapels besides the ones at Berlin and Potsdam and the garrisons use the local churches as best they may. The author quotes the following passage on this subject from the valuable observations of

Chaplain Joseph Clemens, 15th U. S. Infantry, on duty at Tientsin, China:

"The French have no chaplains, neither have the Italians, except for soldiers in the provinces. The Germans have Romanist and Protestant chaplains at all garrisons, who also visit the smaller posts periodically. When no chaplain is obtainable the commanding officer reads the service. Regimental chaplains rank as captains, superintending chaplains as lieutenant colonels. They are paid from the war budget. Roman Catholic and Protestant chaplains are forbidden to talk to any but those of their own faith; the orthodox (Lutheran) may talk to all. They visit the hospitals and prisons.

The Russians provide an Orthodox, a Romanist and a Protestant at each large garrison. For smaller posts they provide an Orthodox chaplain, and for each prison and hospital, but for others they provide chaplains by districts. They do not rank as officers nor wear uniforms, on account of the union of Church and State. The chaplains of one creed are not forbidden to talk to men of another creed. In Russia soldiers are ordered to service twice a week, but elsewhere a priest comes at certain times, and the C. O. conducts services on holydays and special occasions. Chaplains are paid from the war budget.

The British provide chaplains for soldiers everywhere, according to the credal preference made by the soldiers when entering the services, whether Orthodox (Church of England), Romanist or Dissenters (Methodists, Baptists, Presbyterians, etc.). Chaplains rank from citizens to a chaplain general, but do not wear uniforms. They visit the outposts of their commands weekly. When civilian chaplains are employed they receive one shilling a man per annum. An officer

accompanies each detail of men to their various services once a week under orders.

Speaking generally, it may be said the chaplains of European Armies are employed in religious work only."

Dr. McVickar, the venerable founder of the work here, was, like some of the recognized Chaplains in the British Army to-day, a civilian chaplain, and all who have followed him for 70 years have been the same, except Chaplain La Tourette, who served here 1865-8. The present Chaplain (1922) holds a commission as O. R. C.

The students of Columbia in the 40's and 50's had a song about this distinguished scholar and cleric in allusion to his Army chaplaincy which it is supposed amused him as much as the students themselves. The refrain was as follows:

"O! Johnny McVickar's a warlike man;
He's built on the preaching and fighting plan—
He's chaplain of Governor's Island."

At this time Columbia College was at Park Place near the Battery. Dr. McVickar wore a military cape and cap in his attendance at the College as well as when on duty at Fort Columbus and was accustomed to hang them on a hook in view of the students. The author has been told by a distinguished clergyman of the Church who was a student at Columbia under Dr. McVickar in the Class of 1856 that the Reverend Professor-Chaplain was very proud of his chaplaincy at Governors Island as well as of the cap which he wore, and the students, who, it seems, were very much as students are today, appreciating this very pardonable pride, but determined to turn it to good account, formulated a set of verses of which the chorus as given above alone remains.

Columbia College thus has three points of connection with Governors Island—first, when under the early Governors a

certain tract was set apart for the College Revenue, but never used; second, in 1797, when its Professors and students in a body worked on the fortifications; and third, in giving one of its Professors, from 1844 to 1862, as the Chaplain of Governors Island. The labours of the College body on the Harlem fortifications in 1814 must also be remembered.

The following inscription is carved on one of the stone sedilia in the Chapel:

In
Memory of
JOHN McVICKAR
Priest and Doctor
Born 1787, Died 1868
Chaplain of this Post
1844-1862
By whose wisdom and
liberality the first
Chapel of St. Cornelius
the Centurion was
erected in 1846

✠

The law of truth
was in his mouth,
and iniquity
was not found in
his lips.

Dr. McVickar was succeeded in the chaplaincy by the Rev. Mr. Scudder, who held that office from 1862 until 1865.

Upon his retirement the Rev. James Armour Moore La Tourette was appointed in his place. He was a clergyman of the Episcopal Church and served as commissioned chaplain from 1865 until 1868.

One of the Sanctuary sedilia has been designated as a memorial of him, and is thus inscribed:

In
Memory of
JAMES ARMOUR MOORE
LA TOURETTE,
Priest.
Born 1826. Died 1891.
Chaplain of this
Post,
1865-1868.

✠

Faithful in the discharge of duty, notably in the siege of Asiatic cholera of 1866.
Instant in season
Out of season.

In 1868 it was announced by the War Department that as the Island is within the limits of the City of New York, the religious bodies of that city ought to feel interest enough in the spiritual welfare of the men on the Island to supply them with the ministrations of religion. Trinity Church being in the First Ward, in full view from the Island and close at hand, the Rector and Vestry responded without delay to the suggestion of the Government, and immediately made an offer to the War Department to maintain a clergyman at the post at their own expense, who should perform the accustomed duties of a commissioned chaplain. The proposal was accepted August, 1868, as appears from the fol-

CHAPEL OF SAINT CORNELIUS THE CENTURION

1847

lowing extracts from the collection of documents relating to this subject:

WAR DEPARTMENT,

ADJUTANT GENERAL'S OFFICE,

WASHINGTON, August 11th, 1868.

BREVET MAJOR GENERAL D. BUTTERFIELD,
Superintendent Gen'l Rec'g Service,
New York City.

SIR:

Referring to the recommendation contained in your indorsement of the 31st ultimo forwarding a proposition made by the Vestry of Trinity Church, New York, to furnish and pay a clergyman to conduct religious and school exercises at Governor's Island, New York Harbor, said clergyman to be allowed quarters and fuel by the Government and have the facilities usually furnished to chaplains, you are respectfully informed the same has been approved by the Secretary of War.

Very respectfully

Your obedient servant,

(Signed) E. D. TOWNSEND,
Assistant Adjutant General.

HEADQUARTERS GEN'L REC'G SERVICE,

NEW YORK CITY, August 14, 1868.

Official copy respectfully furnished Brevet Brig. General H. D. Wallen, Commanding Fort Columbus, N. Y. H., for his information and guidance and with reference to copy of the letter of Rev. Dr. Dix furnished him from this office, July 31st ultimo.

By order of Bvt. Major Gen'l Butterfield.

(Signed) ASA BIRD GARDINER,
1st Lieut. of 9th Infantry, A. A. A. G.

The first chaplain under this arrangement was the Reverend Jean Batiste C. Beaubien, appointed October 12, 1868, in the following Orders:

GENERAL ORDERS No. 104.
H'DQ'RS PRINCIPAL DEPOT, G. R. S.
FT. COLUMBUS, N. Y. HARBOR,
Dec. 3, 1868.

The Commanding Officer has the pleasure of announcing to the Command that through the generosity and Christian sympathy extended by Trinity Church, New York City, the services of the Rev. J. B. C. Beaubien have been secured as resident chaplain of the Depot; and that certain necessary improvements are about to be made in the Chapel of St. Cornelius for the comfort and convenience of the officers and soldiers here stationed.

Under this beneficient arrangement worship is permanently resumed at the Depot: with Sunday morning and evening services: a Sabbath School and Bible Class.

Although "it is earnestly recommended to all officers and soldiers diligently to attend divine service," and notwithstanding all are cordially invited to attend, yet this invitation is in no sense compulsory and must not be so considered or construed by the officers or non-commissioned officers of the Depot. All must be left free to worship God after their own forms and in accordance with the dictates of their own consciences.

By order of Bvt. Brig. Gen. H. D. Wallen.

I. E. PUTNAM,
1st Lieut. 12th Inf'y & Bvt. Capt. U. S. A.,
Post Adjutant.

At the same time order was taken for certain work for the improvement of the chapel and supplies for the schools in charge of the chaplain.

He was transferred after a little more than a year to another Post and the Rev. Alexander Davidson was appointed, January 10, 1870.

Dr. Dix writes of him as follows in his History of the Chapel of St. Cornelius the Centurion:

"The name of this devoted young priest shines brightly in the annals of our venerable parish; he attained an honor which many have coveted but few secured—the death of those who give their lives for their fellow-men. His career was brief, but glorious. Cordially welcomed to the Island by Bvt. Brig. Gen. Thomas H. Neill, commanding the Depot, and furnished by that officer with instructions for his information and guidance, he began his work with the opening of the year and speedily gave proof of ability and devotion. But, unfortunately, his health was not strong, and after a few months it was deemed advisable that he should take such time as might be necessary for a complete recovery. While he was away on leave of absence, the yellow fever broke out on the Island, late in the summer, attacking officers and men. On receiving the news Davidson returned at once to his post of duty, in spite of the remonstrances of his friends, and after laboring strenuously among the sick contracted the fatal disease and died. His name has been borne upon our rolls thenceforth as one who fell in the service of Christ and of the brethren. In appreciation of his character and acts the vestry adopted these resolutions:

(October 10, 1870.)

> The Comptroller was authorized to pay the expense of printing connected with the memorial of the late Reverend Alexander Davidson, Post Chaplain at Governor's Island, who died recently from yellow fever contracted in his attendance on the sick soldiers under his charge.
>
> Resolved that a tablet be erected in Trinity Church in memory of the Reverend Alexander Davidson, late in the service of this Parish as Chaplain on Governor's Island, who died at that post during the epidemic lately

prevailing there, in the discharge of his duties to the men under his spiritual care.

And that it be referred to a Committee of three, of which the Rector shall be chairman, to procure a design for such tablet and to select a suitable position for it, and to report the same to the Vestry with an estimate of its cost.

Mr. Strong and Mr. Sackett were appointed on the Committee.

At the same meeting a substantial gift was made to the mother of the deceased Chaplain, and an appropriation was voted to enable the Rector to provide for the services at St. Cornelius' Chapel in the interval between the death of Mr. Davidson and the appointment of his successor.

The tablet to his memory was placed in Trinity Church, and may now be seen in the sacristy. It bears this inscription:

In memory of the Rev.
ALEXANDER DAVIDSON
Chaplain at Ft. Columbus
New York Harbor
Who died of Yellow Fever
Sept. A. D. 1870

Though absent on sick leave when the Disease broke out he came back, and while ministering to the Sick and Dying was himself struck down and thus gave his life for his Brethren.

The above inscription is also carved in stone on one of the memorial sedilia in the new Chapel.

The Revd. Edward Hackley Carmichael Goodwin was appointed chaplain Jan'y 17, 1871, and served with great faithfulness until Sept. 30, 1904, when he was retired on a pension.

Upon his reporting at Governors Island the following orders were issued:

HEADQUARTERS PRINCIPAL DEPOT RECRUITING SERVICE,
FORT COLUMBUS, NEW YORK HARBOR,
Jan'y 17, 1871.

SPECIAL ORDERS,
No. 15.

[EXTRACT.]

II. Rev. Mr. E. H. C. Goodwin having reported at these Headquarters is hereby announced as Chaplain of the Post. He will be obeyed and respected accordingly.

By command of Lieut.-Col. T. H. Neill, 6th Cavalry.

JAMES REGAN,
1st Lt. 9th Infantry, Post Adjutant.

When he went to Governors Island there were two separate commands, Fort Columbus and the New York Arsenal. Fort Columbus was a two-company post, commanded at that time, as appears from the special order just quoted, by Lieut.-Col. Thos. H. Neill, 6th Cavalry, while Lieut.-Col. Theodore T. S. Laidley was in command of the Arsenal. To these two officers Mr. Goodwin was indebted for a very cordial reception, and for whatever assistance could be reasonably expected by one entering on duties so novel. Mr. Goodwin speaks of the feeling toward him throughout his long term of office, both personally and in his work, as so kindly that it is difficult to single out names for mention. Colonel Neill's successors, as a rule, were as warmly his friends as was that distinguished officer. Of Colonel Laidley he has spoken to me with peculiar affection, remarking that he was never absent from the chapel when it was open for service, and that, if on the Island, the Colonel was always in his place, with kindly greeting, wise counsel, helpful suggestion, and hearty sympathy. Among

the officers subsequently in command at the Arsenal during his long Chaplaincy from 1871 to 1904 may be specially mentioned Col. Alfred Mordecai, Col. Julian McAlister, Col. J. W. Reilly and Col. John E. Greer.

Of the ladies resident from time to time on Governors Island, Mrs. Hancock organized an efficient choir and played the organ at the chapel services, besides being at the head of several entertainments on the Island given by the officers and ladies at the Post for the benefit of the Chapel. Mrs. Schofield may also be mentioned as greatly interested, and as having made altar cloths and other vestments for the Chapel. The subject of the music was a difficult one, as it was entirely voluntary, an arrangement rendered uncertain and unsatisfactory by the changes in command and the coming and going of regiments. During the whole of her residence Mrs. Hancock took charge of the musical part of the service; Miss Julia Gilliss was also noted for prolonged attention to the work; Mrs. David Robertson, wife of Hospital Steward Robertson, was for a long time the acceptable leader of the choir. Mrs. Schofield, Mrs. Ruggles, Mrs. Arnold, Mrs. Taylor, Mrs. Roger Jones, Mrs. Morrison, and many others, were active helpers of Chaplain Goodwin, and aided in many ways in the adornment of the chapel with contributions of sacramental vessels, altar cross, eucharistic candles and other lights, altar desk, vases, etc., and hangings which were the work of their own hands or purchased by them and presented as offerings of love and devotion. The sympathy of the ladies has been always a strong encouragement to the chaplain and an incentive to, as well as a reward of, his work; and so it continues to the present day.

I may also add to this record the names of General Gillespie, who was especially interested in the work; of Col. J. W. Reilly, who supplemented the offices of the quarter-master by

having the pews repaired by the workmen in his employ, and raised money to recarpet the entire chapel; and of Col. Samuel Brook, adjutant-general, who provided cushions for the pews.

Upon retirement of Chaplain Goodwin the Revd. Edmund Banks Smith was appointed and announced by special orders:

HEADQUARTERS ATLANTIC DIVISION,

SPECIAL ORDERS, No. 72. } GOVERNORS ISLAND, NEW YORK CITY, October 28, 1904.

[EXTRACT.]

1. The Reverend *Edmund Banks Smith* having reported at these headquarters on the 1st instant, is hereby announced as Chaplain of this station pursuant to authority of the War Department contained in letter dated Adjutant General's Office, Washington, August 11, 1868.

He will be obeyed and respected accordingly.

* * * * * *

BY COMMAND OF BRIGADIER GENERAL GRANT:

H. O. S. HEISTAND,
Colonel, Assistant Adjutant General,
Adjutant General.

THE NEW CHAPEL

"In 1904, after nearly sixty years of constant use, the old chapel was found to be in a state of partial decay and no longer safe or convenient for occupancy. There were leaks in the roof and sides; one of the window frames fell out in a high wind; it was very cold in winter; it was battered by the storms of years. The Trinity Church Corporation, after due consideration, abandoned the idea of repairing or endeavoring to restore the old edifice, notwithstanding the associations

connected with it, and decided to ask permission of the Government to replace it with a new building. Negotiations with the War Department were carried on for several months, in the years 1904 and 1905, during which time we were greatly indebted to Maj.-Gen. James F. Wade, Maj.-Gen. Frederick D. Grant, Brig.-Gen. John W. Clous (retired), Col. H. O. S. Heistand, Majors E. M. Weaver, H. Rowan, G. H. G. Gale, and Albert Todd, for valuable advice and assistance, both here and in Washington. To these officers I now have the honor to present our thanks for their coöperation in our cherished plan, and their assistance in enabling us to carry it into effect. After due time consent was given by the War Department; designs for the new building having been submitted, examined, and approved, and a site was designated not far from that of the old chapel. The ceremony of laying the cornerstone, by the Right Rev. David H. Greer, D.D., Bishop Coadjutor of New York, took place on Friday, October 27, 1905, and the chapel was consecrated, with imposing ecclesiastical and military ceremonies, October 19, 1906."

From Dr. Dix's History of the Chapel.

The architect selected to build the chapel was Mr. Charles C. Haight, gentleman well known and esteemed in his profession. He has a military record which merits attention in this connection. During the war for the Union, Mr. Haight served as captain of the 39th Regiment, New York Volunteers. On the second day of the Battle of the Wilderness he commanded that regiment and was severely wounded. He also served as adjutant of the 31st Regiment, United States Volunteers, and in other capacities during the war. His wife was a grand-daughter of the Rev. Dr. John McVickar, chaplain, by whom the first chapel was built in 1846, and his eldest son is Capt. Charles Sidney Haight, 5th U. S. Cavalry.

CHAPEL OF SAINT CORNELIUS THE CENTURION

1906

A number of historical shields of metal which had hung for many years in the Chapel of 1846 were removed to the new Chapel upon its completion and are in the South transept:

A shield commemorating the wreck of the "San Francisco" has on it:

> "Wreck of the San Francisco, Christmas, 1853. The survivors of the 3d Arty in Sorrow and in Thankfulness hang up this Shield."

Four smaller shields bear the following inscriptions:

> "Recruiting Depot. Came, 17th March, 1842. Inscribed these to the Glory of God. Trinity S., 1849."

> "1st Regt Arty Cos. A, B & E. Came Oct. 1848.
> These as good soldiers of Jesus Christ,
> Whitsunday, 1849."

> "3d Regt Arty, Octr, Novr, Decr, 1853."

> "4th Regt Infy
> June, July, } 1852"

Two shields placed in memory of the soldiers who fell during the Mexican War are inscribed:

> "Thou, O Lord, hast covered my head in the day of battle."
> "Thy truth, O Lord, shall be my shield and buckler."

A smaller shield near these two is inscribed:

> "These Shields are set up at the cost of Soldiers returned from Mexico, 1848."

Above the shields hangs a painting of the Virgin of Guadeloupe, from the Hall of the Montezumas, brought up by Colonel Harvey Brown, 1847.

Military trophies connected with the Mexican War are mentioned in the chapter dealing with that period. On the walls hang flags representing every branch of the service, including a number of Spanish captures. Their number is being added to from time to time. The same is true of memorials to officers of the Army. The list at present includes memorial windows to Major-General Winfield Scott Hancock and Mrs. Hancock and to General Daniel Butterfield; a massive stone font in memory of Bvt. Colonel Alexander H. Hoff and Ann E. Van Rensselaer, his wife; Colonel John Van Rensselaer Hoff and Harriet Louisa Hoff, altar vases in memory of Sylvester Day, Surgeon, U. S. A., Bvt. Brig.-Gen. C. Hannibal Day and Maria Houghton his wife, Lieut. Russel H. Day, U. S. A., Murray S. Day, U. S. N., and Bvt.-Col. A. H. Hoff and Clifton Comly, Major Ordnance Corps; in the side chapel a credence and piscina of carved stone in memory of Sumter Loring Edmunds, a credence at the high altar to commemorate the marriage in the old chapel of Mr. and Mrs. Henry Fairfield Osborn. Other gifts are crosses in memory of Charles C. Morrison, Capt. Ordnance Corps, and of Chaplain McVickar, given by his great grandchildren; tablets in memory of Joseph Pynchon Russell, Surgeon, 1790-1849, who served at Fort Columbus 1824-1849, of his son Lieut.-Colonel Edmund Kirby Russell, 1st Artillery, who was born on Governors Island in 1840, and of members of their family; a crucifix in memory of Major Hamilton Rowan; a Prie Dieu in memory of Brig.-Gen. James N. Allison; paintings in memory of Colonel Thomas Staniford and Jennie Jarvis and the Very Revd. Dr. Hoffman; a Pall in memory of James Roth, Flags in memory of Captain Luis Emilio, John Sanford Saltus, Lieut. Hugh W. McKee, U. S. N., and a Pax in memory of Colonel G. H. G. Gale; a Bible in memory of

Brig.-Gen. John W. Clous and a group of paintings of sacred subjects in memory of General Grant. These paintings are assembled in a shrine under a flag canopy and are marked by a brass tablet inscribed by Mrs. Grant, who presented the paintings, as follows:

In Memoriam

✠

Frederick Dent Grant
Major-General United States Army

✠

April 13-26 1912

Services of the Roman Catholic Church have been held for many years on the Island. Prior to 1883 they were under the auspices of St. Peter's Church in Barclay Street, but for twenty-eight years past they have been attended from the Mission at No. 7 State Street, New York.

At one time, according to the remembrance of old residents, these services were held in a building near the old Hospital, at other times in the barracks and the Castle for a short period till a more suitable place could be found. In later years, and for a long time, they have been conducted in the South Battery, and with the completion of the new building in the Battery in 1904 a spacious hall has been used for that purpose, where service is held every Sunday morning.

Chaplains Waring, Dempsey and Dineen officiated here during their tours of duty as Regimental Chaplains at Fort Jay. At present (1922) the services are conducted under the charge of the Revd. Fr. Henry of the State Street Mission, as before.

The Veteran Corps of Artillery, Military Society of the War of 1812, of whose services in 1812 mention is made on p. 95, comes to Governors Island annually at All Saints' for a Memorial Service.

This annual service of commemoration of Departed Comrades who have served with honour in the Army and Navy of the United States of America and in the Militia of the State of New York, in the War of the Revolution and in later National Wars is authorized by the Secretary of War and contains, in addition to the features usual at such a service, the ancient Bidding Prayer as used at Oxford University, the Academic offices and titles being replaced by Military. The Prayer is given here, not only for its beauty of noble English and the high ideal of national life it sets forth, but because, so far as can be learned, this is the only military station in England or America at which it has ever been used.

THE BIDDING PRAYER

Ye shall pray for Christ's Holy Catholic Church and for that pure and Apostolic branch of it which God has planted in these United States of America; and as I am more especially bound, I bid your prayers for the Parish of Trinity Church in the City of New York, that our LORD may bless its labours for Religion in the Army and in the Commonwealth.

Ye shall pray for the President of the United States, and for the Governor of this State, and for all that are in civil authority over us; that all, and every of them, in their several callings may serve truly to the glory of God, and the edifying and well-governing of His people, remembering the account they have to give.

Ye shall pray for the Secretary of War, the Secretary of the Navy, and all others in authority: and more especially for the Commanding General of this Military Corps Area and for those who serve with him: for the

CHAPEL OF SAINT CORNELIUS THE CENTURION

1906

Commander of this Post and all officers and soldiers here stationed, that they may by Thy Divine assistance preserve peace and tranquility in our Land.

Ye shall pray for the National Guard of this State and for all the Military Societies of the Nation, and herein more especially for the members of this Venerable Corps and Military Society, that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things: and that in this State and City and throughout the land whatsoever tends to the advancement of patriotism and true loyalty may forever flourish and abound.

Finally, let us praise God for all them that are departed out of this life in the faith of Christ, for the Patriarchs and Prophets, Apostles, Evangelists, Doctors, Martyrs and Confessors, whom He hath bestowed on His Church to shine as lights in their generations from the beginning of the world; for patriots and soldiers, for those who have given their lives in defence of country, for the Founders of this Corps and those who bear their names: and for all our departed members who having finished their course in faith do now rest from their labours.

There was found, a number of years ago, in a little gilt frame of ancient design, a Prayer for Soldiers, evidently composed by the Revd. Dr. McVickar. This prayer is still used today at the public services of the Chapel, and is given herewith:

A PRAYER FOR THE ARMY,

CHAPEL OF ST. CORNELIUS THE CENTURION,
GOVERNOR'S ISLAND, NEW
YORK HARBOUR.

O Almighty Lord God, Who didst choose Thy Servant Cornelius the Centurion, a devout man, and one that feared God with all his house, to be the first fruits of the Gospel among the Gentiles, and an example to those who should follow him in the profession of arms, we humbly

implore Thy blessing upon those who serve in the Army of the United States. Make them to have a love of order and good discipline: may they have the victory over all their enemies, and by Thy Divine assistance preserve peace and tranquility in our land. Do Thou comfort and help the sick and show Thy pity upon all prisoners and captives. [*Look with the eyes of Thy mercy upon the wounded, and have in Thy holy keeping the souls of those who have fallen in battle.]

More especially we pray for St. Cornelius' Chapel and all Benefactors of the same, and this Station in which we dwell. Send a blessing upon the officers and other soldiers and all under authority: and grant that in the true Faith of Thy Holy Name we may manfully fight under Christ's banner against sin, the world and the Devil, and continue His faithful Soldiers and Servants unto our lives' end: All which we ask in the name and for the sake of the great Captain of our Salvation, Thy Son our Saviour Jesus Christ. *Amen.*

The cornerstone of the new St. Cornelius Chapel was laid on October 27, 1905. The Chapel was consecrated, with imposing military and ecclesiastical ceremonies on St. Frideswide's Day, October 19, 1906. General Grant wrote as follows in appreciation of the work of Trinity Church for the Army:

LETTER FROM GENERAL GRANT REGARDING THE NEW CHAPEL.

"GOVERNOR'S ISLAND, NEW YORK,
October 7th, 1908.

TO THE RECTOR, CHURCHWARDENS AND VESTRYMEN OF TRINITY CHURCH.

MY DEAR SIRS:—

As Commanding General of the Department of the East, residing here on Governor's Island, I beg to express on my own behalf and for the officers of the United

*In time of war.

ONE OF MANY BATTLE FLAGS IN THE CHAPEL AS DETAILED IN THE CHART

THIS IS THE OLDEST ARMY FLAG KNOWN. 1ST U. S. INFANTRY 1789

States Army in general, and more especially for those stationed here, with their families, as well as on behalf of the enlisted men and all others residing here within my command, the very deep appreciation felt by myself and by those mentioned, of the work so generously and liberally carried out by Trinity Church here, for years past.

It appears from the records that the first Chapel building in 1846-7 was due largely to the contributions of Trinity Church Corporation, and for many years after the date mentioned annual appropriations were made by the Church regularly for its support and to assist the Chaplain here in his work on Governor's Island. From 1868 to the present time, by authority of the Secretary of War, Trinity Church has maintained the Chaplain, and in 1906 completed the beautiful stone chapel which was dedicated that year, October 19th, with ceremonies of a Military and Ecclesiastical character.

St. Cornelius' Chapel is the most beautiful and inspiring place of worship of the United States Army now in existence, and, decorated with its historic flags and cannon is deeply appreciated by all who enter within its sacred walls, and has been the cause of several requests from other Military Garrisons that similar Chapels might be built. I myself gratefully realize the happy relations existing between the Church and the Army brought about by the magnificent donation of Trinity Church in placing this Chapel on Governor's Island.

* * * * * *

The Revd Morgan Dix, late Rector of Trinity Church, was in his lovable, noble example and his Christian character a wonderful aid and inspiration in establishing the happy relations between the Church & the Army, and he exerted a most chastening influence over these coming within the sphere of his labor and gentle sympathy.

I deeply appreciate the opportunity I have had, as Department Commander here, to witness the work so nobly

accomplished by Trinity Church for the good of the United States Army, and I beg to express my own grateful thanks, to you, the Rector, Churchwardens and Vestrymen of Trinity Church, for your Christian help extending in results from Governors Island throughout the Department of the East and to the Army of the United States.

Believe me, Sirs,

Your faithful servant,

FREDERICK D. GRANT,
Major General, U. S. A."

GOVERNORS ISLAND EXTENSION

1906

CHAPTER IX.

Governors Island Extension

It was not until 1797, after Washington had retired from the Presidency, that the irritation between the United States and France grew serious. Pressing remonstrances were made to Congress that the City be protected in its helpless condition, the State having by the Constitution ceded to the General Government the power of providing for the common defense. The Government contended that it had not the power to pass any law impairing the obligations of contracts; that a balance of $2,075,846 due from the State of New York to the United States by an award of the "Commissioner of Accounts," dated Philadelphia, Dec. 1793, must first be paid. At length, after much altercation, Congress declared, by a law passed May 3, 1798, that "Where any State, which was found indebted to the United States, should, with the President's approbation, proceed to finish or complete any fortifications heretofore commenced by such State for the defense of any port or harbor within the same, or shall, under the direction of the President, make and erect any additional fortifications, pursuant to the act entitled 'An Act to provide for the further defense of the ports and harbors of the United States,' providing that no expenditures exceeding the balance found and reported against the respective States shall be allowed as aforesaid: and provided, that the fortifications for which the whole or any part of the expenditures shall be allowed and credited as aforesaid, with their privileges and appurtenances shall be, and shall be declared and established, as the property of the United States while maintained by them."

Under the provisions of the Act, the State was duly credited with the several amounts of money it had expended by au-

thority of legislative acts, in the erection of fortifications on Governors Island. By the authority of an act passed March 26, 1794, £30,000 had been so appropriated. This sum had been expended under the supervision of George Clinton, Matthew Clarkson, James Watson, Richard Varick, Nicholas Fish, Ebenezer Stevens and Elijah Hammond.

A further sum of £20,000 had been granted April 6, 1795, to complete certain works on Governors Island and Ellis Island.

This Island, together with other islands in the vicinity, was ceded to the United States Government by an act of the Legislature passed February 15, 1800. The following is a copy of the said act:

CHAPTER 6, LAWS OF 1800.

AN ACT to cede to the United States the jurisdiction of certain islands situate in and about the harbour of New York.

Be it enacted by the people of the State of New York represented in Senate and Assembly: That the following islands, in and about the harbour of New York, and in and about the fortifying of which, this State hath heretofore expended or caused to be expended large sums of money, to wit, all that certain island called Bedlow's island, bounded on all sides by the waters of the Hudson River; all that certain island, called Oyster Island, bounded on all sides by the waters of the Hudson River; and all that certain island called Governor's Island, on which Fort Jay is situate, bounded on all sides by the waters of the East River and Hudson River, shall hereafter be subject to the jurisdiction of the United States: Provided, that this cession shall not extend to prevent the execution of any process, civil or criminal, issuing under the authority of this State, but that such process may be served and executed on the said islands respectively, any thing therein contained notwithstanding.

The island referred to as Oyster Island, in the foregoing act was subsequently named and is now known as Ellis' Island.

The Sundry Civil Act of 1901 made an appropriation for beginning the Extension of Governors Island. This was extended to include an addition of about 82 acres to the area of the Island by enclosing with a bulkhead part of the shoal to the S. W. of the Island and filling the enclosure, the building of a wharf on the N. shore and dredging to a depth of 26 feet in front of the wharf and the erection of buildings. The work of enlargement, including the construction of a wharf and dredging, was estimated to cost $1,100,000, and was assigned to the Engineer Corps. By a modification of the plan adopted in April, 1902, the enlargement was to be extended S. W. over the shoal to reclaim an additional area of about 19 acres, making the total area on enlargement 103 acres. In January, 1913, the Extension was turned over by the Engineer Department to the Commanding Officer, Fort Jay.

That it was the intention of the Legislature to cede title as well as jurisdiction is clearly evident from the Act approved May 7, 1880, ceding certain lands covered with water, which is as follows:

> SECTION 1: "All the right and title of the State of New York to the following described parcels of land covered with water, adjacent and contiguous to the lands of the United States, in the harbor of New York, at Governor's Island, * * * and jurisdiction over the same, are hereby released and ceded to the United States under Article I, Section 8, Paragraph 17 of the constitution, for the purpose of erecting and maintaining docks, wharves, boat-houses, sea walls, batteries, and other needful structures. Provided that jurisdiction hereby ceded shall continue no longer than the United States shall own said land at Governors Island, * * * and the adjacent lands covered with water herein de-

scribed and hereby released; and provided further that all civil and such criminal process as may lawfully issue under authority of this state may be served or executed over said released lands."

Subsequent to the passage of the foregoing Act, to wit, May 26, 1880, the submerged premises were granted and conveyed to the United States of America by the Governor of the State of New York, by letters patent, * * *. Patent recorded in Book of Patents, No. 44, page 604, etc., in the office of the Secretary of State for the State of New York.

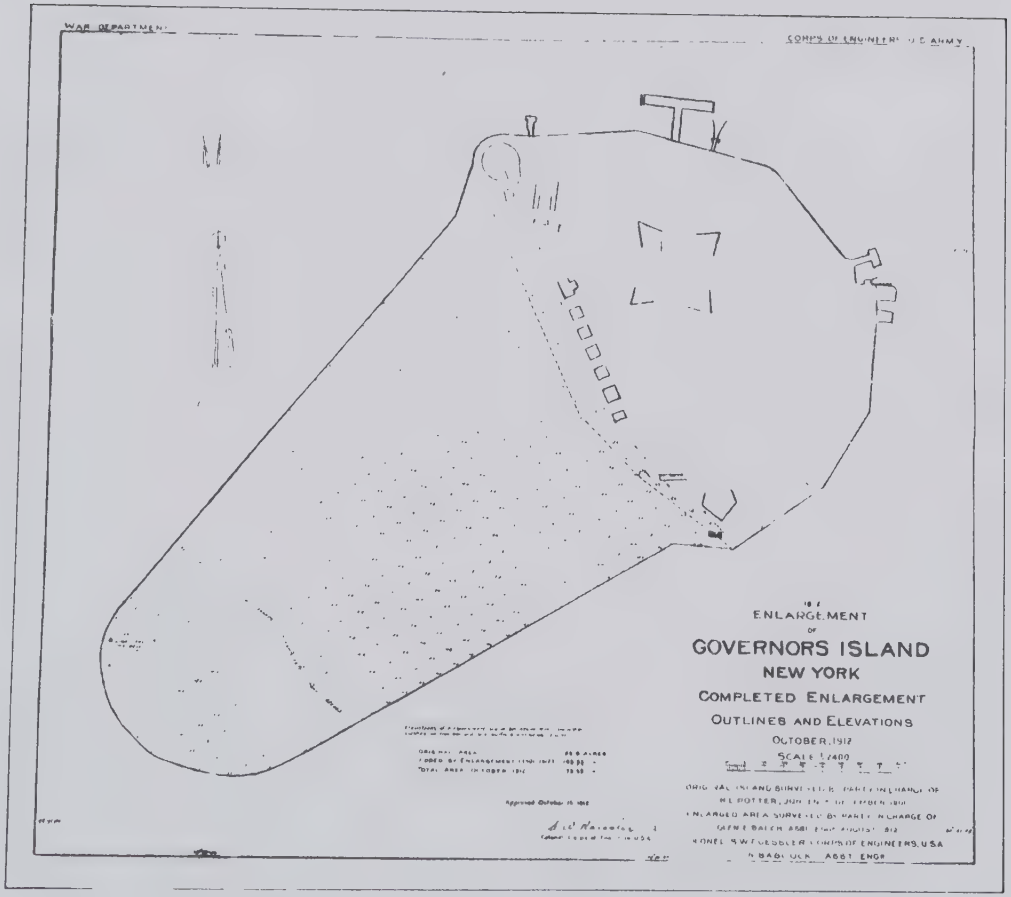
Laws of the State of New York, Chapter 57, Consolidated Laws of 1909, Article 3, Section 22. "Title and jurisdiction to the following described tracts or parcels of land have been ceded to the United States by this state on condition that jurisdiction so ceded should not prevent the execution of any process, etc., except as such process might affect the property of the United States on Governor's Island," * * * &c.

Referring to the letters patent (as above), the acting Corporation Counsel, City of New York, stated June 16th, 1910, in a communication addressed to the President of the Department of Taxes and Assessments, New York, that the "lands under water covered by these letters patent are the property of the United States and therefore exempt from taxation."*

The actual extension of work was begun August, 1901, and the sea wall was first built to enclose the area. Its length is 7,219 feet and there are 4,787,748 cubic yards in the extension, the material having been obtained from dredged channels and excavation earth, New York City. The number of acres is 103.55 in the extension, as compared with 69.8 in the Old Island,† 173.35 in all.

* It appears from the foregoing that the United States owns Governors Island in fee simple.

† v. note, page 19.



ENGINEERS' PLAN FOR THE ENLARGEMENT OF GOVERNORS ISLAND

1901-1912

The work was done by the Engineer Department under the command of Colonel W. L. Marshall (Retired Brig.-Gen.) and Colonel S. W. Roessler, both of the Corps of Engineers.

When work on the enlargement was begun the contractors for building the sea wall were required to mark the end of their work with a lantern. As the foundation advanced into deeper water, better signals became necessary, and a wrecked schooner was used for the purpose. In the winter of 1910 the schooner was released and a house built on the land. The lantern, fog bell and striking mechanism were loaned by the Light House Bureau. This light was taken over by the Light House Bureau May 10th, 1912. The average number of men employed was 40; locomotives, 3; engines, 3; derricks, 2.

As late as the year 1900 the sea wall was in front of the present Regimental line (Brick Row), and when the sea was high spray would dash upon the front of the houses. A fine level plain (sown to grass in 1911) soon stretched its hundred acres of refreshing green to the west and south.

The estimated cost of this improvement was $1,100,000 and the Engineering Department completed the extension for this amount. The approximate cost per acre was $10,000.

CHAPTER X.

Regiments
Colonial, Revolutionary
and
American

Regiments of the English and American forces have been stationed on Governors Island as follows:

English

1756-1772.

H. M. 60th Regiment of Foot, the Royal Americans.

1755-1767.

Maj.-Gen. Sir William Pepperell's Regiment.

1767.

H. M. 44th Regiment of Foot.

1767.

H. M. 22d Regiment of Foot.

American

1775.

General William Prescott's Regiment, the "Bunker Hill Regiment."

1776.

The 4th Continental Infantry, Colonel John Nixon commanding. Brig.-Gen'l, 9th August, 1776.

April, 1776.

Genl. Putnam's forces, 1,000 men, draughts from Colonel Silliman's Regiment, Colonel Wm. Douglas' Regiment and others.

August, 1776.

2,000 troops, Regiments not specified.

English

Aug., 1776, to Dec. 3d, 1783.

Forces under Major-General Pattison, Buskirk's Battalion and other troops—detailed list not known.

American

1794—Artillery.

Capt. Cornelius R. Sedam, Sub-Legion.

1795—Artillery.

Captain Alexander Thompson, Corps of Artillerists and Engineers.

1799—2nd Artillery.

Implied in the recorded burial of Lieut. Robert Heaton, Jr., 2nd Artillery.

1808—Artillery.

Capt. Richd. Wiley.

1810—14.

Colonel Henry Burbeck, Lieut. Vandeventer, Justus, Adjutant of the Artillery.

1811—1st Artillery—Major Stoddard.

*1811—Light Artillery—Captain Irvine's Company.

1814—Infantry.

Lt.-Col. Tallmadge, Major Delafield.

1815—Artillery troops.

James House, Lt.-Col., commanding. Charles Anthony, Adjutant.

1816—Artillery troops.

Implied in the recorded burial of James H. Boyle, Major of Artillery.

---

*The Light Artillery Regiment was organized in 1808 and consolidated with the Artillery and Ordnance in 1821. Captain Winfield Scott was one of the Company Commanders. In this year (1811) Captain Scott's Company was still on the Mississippi. (From Major Wm. L. Haskin's Mss. History of the Regiment)

1819—Artillery troops.

Implied in the recorded burial of Samuel Armstrong, Lieut. of Artillery.

A list of commanding officers from 1821 is furnished by the kindness of The Adjutant-General, Washington, who states that there are no returns on file previous to 1821. The early records were destroyed by the British when they invaded Washington in 1812, and no records between that date and 1821 are on file.

POST COMMANDERS

1821-1922

		ASSUMED COMMAND
1ST LIEUT. GILES PORTER....	1st Art'y...	May, 1821
1ST LIEUT. PETER MELENDY..	1st Art'y....	June and July, 1821
CAPT. S. CHURCHILL.....	4th Art'y....	Aug. and Sept., 1821
1ST LIEUT. GILES PORTER....	1st Art'y....	Oct., 1822
CAPT. MILO MASON.....	1st Art'y....	April, 1823
1ST LT. W. WHEELRIGHT....	1st Art'y...	July, 1823
CAPT. A. C. W. FANNING....	2d Art'y....	Aug., 1823
CAPT. MILO MASON.....	1st Art'y....	Sept., 1823
CAPT. A. C. W. FANNING....	2d Art'y....	Oct., 1823
1ST LT. E. LYON.....	2d Art'y....	April, 1824
LT.-COL. WM. MCRAE.....	2d Art'y....	Aug., 1824
CAPT. R. A. ZANTZINGER....	2d Art'y....	April, 1827
MAJOR I. B. CRANE.....	4th Art'y....	Aug., 1828
LT.-COL. A. EUSTIS.....	4th Art'y....	June, 1831
MAJOR I. B. CRANE.....	4th Art'y....	Nov., 1831
MAJOR A. C. W. FANNING...	4th Art'y....	Feb. 10, 1833
CAPT. B. K. PIERCE.....	4th Art'y....	June 2, 1834
LT.-COL. A. S. BROOKS.....	4th Art'y....	May 2, 1835
CAPT. WM. W. TOMPKINS...	2d Dragoons.	Sept. 28, 1836
LT. JOHN C. PEMBERTON....	4th Art'y....	Aug. 26, 1837
CAPT. WM. L. MCCLINTOCK.	3d Art'y....	Oct. 5, 1837

1821-1922		ASSUMED COMMAND
Lt. William Hoffman.....	6th Inft'y...	Mch. 23, 1837
Asst. Surg. Joseph Eaton..	..	Jany., 1838
1st Lt. E. C. Ross.....	4th Art'y....	June 30, 1837
Capt. John Erving.....	4th Art'y....	Sept., 1838
(Entire Regiment)		
Lt.-Col. A. C. W. Fanning..	4th Art'y....	Apr. 30, 1839
Col. D. E. Twiggs.....	2d Dragoons.	June 5, 1839
Capt. Justin Dimick.....	1st Art'y....	Nov., 1839
Col. James Bankhead.....	2d Art'y.....	Aug., 1841
Capt. Chas. S. Merchant..	4th Art'y....	Dec. 10, 1841
Lt.-Col. A. C. W. Fanning..	4th Art'y....	Jan. 2, 1842
Col. James Bankhead.....	2d Art'y.....	July 2, 1842
Capt. Gabriel J. Rains.....	7th Inft'y...	Jan. 13, 1847
Col. I. B. Crane.....	4th Art'y....	Sept. 12, 1848
Major John L. Gardner....	4th Art'y....	Dec., 1850
Major Gabriel J. Rains....	7th Inft'y...	July 26, 1852
Lt.-Col. John L. Gardner..	4th Art'y....	Aug. 5, 1852
Lt.-Col. M. M. Payne.....	4th Art'y....	Sept. 26, 1852
Capt. John T. Sprague....	8th Inft'y...	Nov. 27, 1852
Lt.-Col. J. J. Abercrombie..	2d Inft'y....	Aug. 2, 1854
Major Electus Backus....	3d Inft'y....	July 2, 1855
Major Albermarle Cady...	6th Inft'y....	July 12, 1857
Major Theophilus H. Holmes	8th Inft'y...	July 2, 1859
Maj. Samuel P. Heintzleman	1st Inft'y...	Aprl. 14, 1861
Lt.-Col. Charles F. Smith.	10th Inft'y....	May 8, 1861
Col. Gustavus Loomis.....	5th Inft'y....	Aug. 26, 1861
Capt. John D. Wilkins....	3d Inft'y....	Aug. 6, 1864
Col. J. D. Bomford.....	16th Inft'y...	Sept. 6, 1864
Major M. Cogswell.....	8th Inft'y....	Feb. 16, 1865

1821-1922			ASSUMED COMMAND
Lt.-Col. Julius Hayden	10th Inft'y.	May	27, 1865
Lt.-Col. Henry D. Wallen	14th Inft'y.	Mch.	7, 1867
Lt.-Col. Thos. H. Neill	Inft'y.	May	5, 1869
Major M. M. Blunt	14th Inft'y.	June	22, 1871
Major James P. Roy	6th Inft'y.	Feb.	26, 1873
Major R. E. A. Crofton	17th Inft'y.	Oct.	2, 1874
Major Alex. Chambers	24th Inft'y.	Oct.	14, 1876
Capt. E. G. Bush	10th Inft'y.	June	30, 1877
Capt. J. P. Sanger	1st Art'y.	July	3, 1878
Capt. Thomas Ward	1st Art'y.	July	2, 1880
Major John Mendenhall	1st Art'y.	Nov.	9, 1880
Capt. Thomas Ward	1st Art'y.	Oct.	5, 1881
Capt. F. L. Guenther	5th Art'y.	Nov.	4, 1881
Capt. W. B. Beck	5th Art'y.	Nov.	11, 1882
Major R. A. Jackson	5th Art'y.	Dec.	21, 1882
Capt. W. F. Randolph	5th Art'y.	Nov.	7, 1886
Major M. P. Miller	5th Art'y.	May	6, 1888
Capt. W. B. Beck	5th Art'y.	Dec.	8, 1888
Major Tully McCrea	5th Art'y.	May	16, 1889
Capt. W. B. Beck	5th Art'y.	June	18, 1889
Major Tully McCrea	5th Art'y.	Oct.	9, 1889
Major W. L. Haskin	1st Art'y.	May	15, 1890
Capt. P. H. Ellis	13th Inft'y.	Oct.	2, 1894
Lt.-Col. W. S. Worth	13th Inft'y.	Dec.	30, 1894
Capt. Luigi Lomia	5th Art'y.	Apr.	20, 1898
Col. Thomas H. Barber	1st N. Y. Vol. Inft'y.	June	11, 1898
Capt. Thomas R. Adams	5th Art'y.	July	8, 1898
Lt. E. S. Fullerton	1st Mass. Heavy Art'y	Aug.	5, 1898
Major P. H. Ellis	Infantry	Sept.	14, 1898
Lt.-Col. John N. Coe	13th Inft'y.	Sept.	19, 1898

1821-1922		ASSUMED COMMAND
Capt. B. K. Roberts	5th Art'y	Apr. 20, 1899
Major G. A. Cornish	15th Inft'y	Jan. 23, 1900
Major E. R. Hills	5th Art'y	July 24, 1900
Major A. L. Myer	11th Inft'y	Aug. 11, 1900
Lt.-Col. C. L. Davis	11th Inft'y	Dec. 22, 1900
Major E. R. Hills	Art'y Corps	April 7, 1901
Capt. John Conklin	Art'y Corps	Aug. 24, 1901
Capt. Archibald Campbell	Art'y Corps	Sept. 9, 1901
Major W. P. Duvall	Art'y Corps	Dec. 4, 1901
Col. W. E. Dougherty	8th Inft'y	Oct. 12, 1902
Capt. John Stafford	8th Inft'y	Jan. 25, 1904
Capt. W. Y. Stamper	8th Inft'y	Aug. 26, 1904
Col. F. A. Smith	8th Inft'y	Aug. 13, 1904
Maj. Francis P. Fremont	5th Inft'y	Feb. 20, 1906
Col. Leven C. Allen	12th Inft'y	May 24, 1906
Capt. Moor N. Falls	12th Inft'y	July 16, 1906
Capt. Winfred B. Carr	C. A. C.	Aug. 5, 1906
Maj. J. S. Mallory	12th Inft'y	Aug. 31, 1906
Col. Leven C. Allen	12th Inft'y	Sept. 30, 1906
Lt.-Col. Robert F. Ames	12th Inft'y	May 27, 1908
Capt. James P. Harbeson	12th Inft'y	June 12, 1908
Col. Wm. H. C. Bowen	12th Inft'y	July 15, 1908
Maj. Chas. L. Beckurts	5th Inft'y	June 29, 1909
Col. H. K. Bailey	29th Inft'y	Sept. 18, 1909
Capt. J. F. Madden, Adjt	29th Inft'y	May 21, 1910
Capt. Chas. H. Paine, Q. M.	29th Inft'y	June 12, 1910
Capt. J. F. Madden, Adjt	29th Inft'y	July 31, 1910
Col. H. K. Bailey	29th Inft'y	Aug. 27, 1910
Capt. J. F. Madden, Adjt	29th Inft'y	Aug. 24, 1911
Col. G. R. Cecil	29th Inft'y	Sept. 3, 1911
Capt. A. C. Dalton, Q. M.	29th Inft'y	July 6, 1912
Col. G. R. Cecil	29th Inft'y	Aug. 8, 1912

1821-1922		ASSUMED COMMAND
Col. John S. Mallory	29th Inft'y	Sept. 10, 1912
Capt. M. H. Barry	C. A. C.	Mar. 16, 1915
Capt. Charles L. Fisher	C. A. C.	July 31, 1915
Capt. Frank J. Miller	C. A. C.	April 1, 1916
Col. John C. F. Tillson	22d Inft'y	April 1, 1917
Lt.-Col. R. R. Wood	22d Inft'y	Febr. 18, 1920
Col. John C. F. Tillson	22d Inft'y	April 14, 1920
Lt.-Col. R. R. Wood	22d Inft'y	May 26, 1920
Lt.-Col. John McA. Palmer	22d Inft'y	June 15, 1920
Lt.-Col. R. R. Wood	22d Inft'y	July 31, 1920
Col. John McA. Palmer	22d Inft'y	Oct. 1, 1920
Lt.-Col. Wm. G. Doane	22d Inft'y	May 7, 1921
*Col. Samson L. Faison	22d Inft'y	July 20, 1921
Col. Francis E. Lacey, Jr.	16th Inft'y	Aug. 1, 1922

The U. S. Disciplinary Barracks, Atlantic Branch, were ordered established August 15th, 1922, under Colonel Julius A. Penn, Inft'y, as Commandant.

Captain James B. Ettridge, Q. M. C.

1st Lieutenant John V. Domminey, Inft'y, D. O. L., Assistants to the Commanding Officer.

The Division and Department Headquarters Transferred to Governors Island

On July 1, 1878, the Headquarters of the Military Division of the Atlantic and the Department of the East were transferred from the Army Building, Houston Street, to Gover-

---

* Appointed Brig.-General June 13, 1922.

nors Island, in compliance with G. O. 42 c. s., with the following personnel:

MAJ.-GEN. WINFIELD SCOTT HANCOCK, Commanding.

COLONEL JAMES B. FRY, Adjutant General.

MAJOR GUIDO N. LIEBER, Judge Advocate.

COLONEL LANGDON C. EASTON, Chief Quarter-Master.

COLONEL MARCUS D. L. SIMPSON, Chief Commissary of Subsistence.

COLONEL JOHN M. CUYLER, Medical Director.

COLONEL NATHAN W. BROWN, Chief Paymaster.

Attached

CAPTAIN WM. G. MITCHELL, 5th Infantry, aide-de-camp. Acting Engineer Officer.

CAPTAIN JOHN S. WHARTON, 19th Infantry, aide-de-camp.

1ST LIEUT. GEORGE S. L. WARD, 22nd Infantry, aide-de-camp.

On detached service

COLONEL NELSON H. DAVIS, Inspector General's Department.

Battery A, 1st Artillery, Captain J. P. Sanger, 2nd Lieut. A. Slaker, Adjutant, was transferred from Fort Warren, Mass., to Governors Island, arriving July 2nd, 1878. Battery D, 1st Artillery, was ordered here from Fort Independence, Mass., arriving July 19, 1878, relieving the Garrison which in April, 1878, consisted of the following: Co's. A and C, Permanent Party; Co. B, Music Boys, quartered in South Battery; Co. D, select; Co's. E and F recruits; Co. H. coloured Infantry, Capt. E. G. Bush, 10th Infantry, commanding.

COMMANDING OFFICERS

With the coming of the Division and Headquarters Commanding General and Staff a change was made in the life and

interest of the Garrison. The Recruiting Service which had had its Depot here was transferred to David's Island (Fort Slocum) where it still remains.

Fort Wood was at this time garrisoned by a detachment of the 3d Artillery, under command of Lieutenant J. C. White.

The various events connected with the period have been mentioned incidentally. It remains now to give the names and years of command of the General Officers who have served on Governors Island since it became a Division Headquarters:

General Officers Commanding

Maj.-Gen. Winfield Scott Hancock, July 1, 1878-Feby. 9, 1886.

Maj.-Gen. John M. Schofield, April 13, 1886-Dec. 12, 1888.

Maj.-Gen. Oliver O. Howard, Dec. 12, 1888-Nov. 8, 1894.

Maj.-Gen. Nelson A. Miles, Nov. 20, 1894-Oct. 4, 1895.

Maj.-Gen. Thomas H. Ruger, Oct. 4, 1895-April 10, 1897.

Maj.-Gen. Wesley Merritt, April 10, 1897-May 19, 1898. January 7, 1899-May 19, 1900.

Brig.-Gen. Royal T. Frank, U. S. V., May 19, 1898-June 30, 1898.

Brig.-Gen. George L. Gillespie, U. S. V., June 30, 1898-Oct. 4, 1898.

Maj.-Gen. Wm. R. Shafter, U. S. V., Oct. 4, 1898-Jany. 7, 1899.

Maj.-Gen. Wesley Merritt, Jany. 7, 1899-May 19, 1900.

Maj.-Gen. John R. Brooke, May 10, 1900-July 21, 1902.

Maj.-Gen. Arthur MacArthur, July 21, 1902-Nov. 8, 1902.

MAJ.-GEN. ADNA R. CHAFFEE, Nov. 21, 1902-Oct. 26, 1903.

MAJ.-GEN. HENRY C. CORBIN, Dept. East, Oct. 26, 1903-Oct. 1, 1904.

(Atlantic Division, Jany. 5, 1904-Oct. 1, 1904.)

MAJ.-GEN. FREDERICK DENT GRANT (Dept. East), Oct. 1, 1904-Nov. 10, 1908.

MAJ.-GEN. JAMES F. WADE, Dec. 1, 1904-April 4, 1907.

(Atlantic Division discontinued June 30, 1907.)

MAJ.-GEN. LEONARD WOOD (Dept. East), Nov. 10, 1908-July 19, 1910.

BRIG.-GEN. WALTER HOWE (Dept. East), April 8, 1910-July 20, 1910.

MAJ.-GEN. FREDERICK DENT GRANT (Eastern Division and Dept. East), July 25, 1910-April 11, 1912.*

BRIG.-GEN. TASKER H. BLISS (Eastn. Div. and Dept. East), Jan'y 29, 1912-Aug. 31, 1912.

MAJ.-GEN. THOMAS H. BARRY (Eastern Division and Eastern Department), Sept. 1, 1912.

MAJ.-GEN. THOMAS H. BARRY, U. S. A. (Commanding Eastern Division), Sept. 1, 1912, to Feb. 14, 1913.

MAJ.-GEN. THOMAS H. BARRY, U. S. A. (Commanding Eastern Department), Feb. 15, 1913, to Feb. 26, 1914.

BRIG.-GEN. R. K. EVANS, U. S. A. (Commanding Eastern Department), Feb. 27, 1914, to June 30, 1914.

MAJ.-GEN. LEONARD WOOD, U. S. A. (Commanding Eastern Department), July 1, 1914, to April 30, 1917.

MAJ.-GEN. J. FRANKLIN BELL, U. S. A. (Commanding Eastern Department), May 1, 1917, to August 24, 1917.

---

* Major-General Frederick Dent Grant died April 11, 1912. His body lay in the Chapel under guard from April 13 till April 26, on which day the funeral ceremonies took place. The interment was in the Cemetery at West Point.

Brig.-Gen. Eli D. Hoyle, U. S. A. (Commanding East. Dept.), August 25, 1917, to Jan. 14, 1918.

Brig.-Gen. William A. Mann, U. S. A. (Commanding Eastern Department), January 15, 1918, to July 31, 1918.

Maj.-Gen. J. Franklin Bell, U. S. A. (Commanding East. Dept.), August 1, 1918, to Jan. 8, 1919.

Maj.-Gen. Thomas H. Barry, U. S. A. (Commanding Eastern Department), January 15, 1919, to Oct. 13, 1919.

Maj.-Gen. Charles J. Bailey, U. S. A. (Commanding Eastern Department), October 14, 1919, to Oct. 30, 1919.

Lieut.-Gen. Robert L. Bullard, U. S. A. (Commanding Eastern Department), October 31, 1919, to Aug. 31, 1920.

Lieut.-Gen. Robert L. Bullard, U. S. A. (Commanding Second Corps Area), September 1, 1920, to June 30, 1921.

Maj.-Gen. Robert L. Bullard, U. S. A. (Commanding Second Corps Area), July 1, 1921, to.....

Maj.-Gen. Harry C. Hale, U. S. A. (Commanding Second Corps Area), June 7th, 1922, to .....

(During temporary absence of Major-General Robert L. Bullard, U. S. A.)

Headquarters Second Corps Area

Governors Island, New York

August 1, 1922

Commander: Maj.-Gen. Robert L. Bullard.

Temporarily in Command: Maj.-Gen. Harry C. Hale.

Aides-de-Camp to General Bullard:

Capt. Benjamin F. Caffey, Jr., Inf.

Capt. Charles W. Yuill, Inf.

Aides-de-Camp to General Hale:

Capt. Harold M. Tague, Inf.

1st Lieut. William T. Hammond, Inf.

Chief of Staff: Colonel Peter Murray, G. S.

Assistants to the Chief of Staff:

G-1: Colonel Ralph E. Ingram, G. S.

Asst. to G-1: Lt.-Col. John L. Bond, Inf.

G-2: Colonel John R. Procter, G. S.

Asst. to G-2: Capt. Joseph P. Cromwell, Inf.

G-3: Colonel Harrison J. Price, G. S.

Asst. to G-3: Lt.-Col. James A. Higgins, Inf.

G-4: Colonel William P. Jackson, G. S.

Adjutant: Colonel Frederick W. Lewis, A. G. D.

Assistants to the Adjutant:

Lt.-Col. John B. Shuman, A. G. D.

Major Wm. C. Rose, A. G. D.

Chief Clerk: Mr. Michael F. Halpin, A. F. C.

Recruiting Officer: Major Harvey H. Fletcher, Inf.

Assistant: Capt. Walter C. Merkel, S. C.

Inspector: Colonel Tyree R. Rivers, I. G. D.

Assistants:

Major Hugo E. Pitz, I. G. D.

Major Frank M. Holmes, I. G. D.

Judge Advocate: Colonel Frederick M. Brown, J. A. G. D.

Assistants:

Major Allen W. Gullion, J. A. G. D.

Major Wm. A. Turnbull, J. A. G. D.

Quartermaster: Lt.-Col. Grayson V. Heidt, Q. M. C.

Assistants:

Lt.-Col. A. J. Lynch, Q. M. C., Exec. Off'r.

Major Frank E. Davis, Q. M. C.

Capt. Mortimer C. Addoms, Jr., Q. M. C.

Capt. Wm. H. Mallon, Q. M. C.

Capt. Frederick Felix, Q. M. C.

Capt. Geo. W. Armitage.

1st Lieut. Geo. T. Liles, Q. M. C.

Finance Officer: Colonel Willard H. McCornack, F. D.
Acting Finance Officer:
Lt. Col. Hilden Olin, F. D.
Assistants:
Capt. Voler V. Viles, F. D.
1st Lt. Waldo S. Ickes, F. D.
Surgeon: Colonel Frank R. Keefer, M. C.
Assistants:
Major Charles H. Jewell, V. C.
1st Lt. John W. Cleave, M. A. C.
Engineer: Colonel John C. Oakes, C. of E.
Ordnance Officer: Major Selby H. Frank, Ord. Dept.
Assistant:
1st Lt. Beverly St. G. Tucker, Ord. Dept.
Signal Officer: Colonel Charles McK. Saltzman, S. C.
Assistant:
Capt. Calvert H. Arnold, S. C.
Air Officer: Major Arnold N. Krogstad, A. S.
Chemical Warfare Officer: Capt. Chas. S. Moyer, C. W. S.
National Guard Officer: Colonel Raymond Sheldon, Inf.
R. O. T. C. Officer: Major Wade H. Carpenter, C. A. C.
Assistant:
Major Thomas L. Crystal, Inf.

Chaplain:

Edmund Banks Smith, O. R. C.

Infantry Commands

The Garrison remained an Artillery one till October, 1804. In June, 1894, the last Artillery command consisted of Batteries B, H, and M, 1st Artillery, Major Wm. L. Haskin commanding.

The command was relieved on October 2nd and 3rd, 1804, by the arrival of the following companies of the 13th Infantry—Co. F, Capt. J. Forance; Co. B, Capt. H. Gilman; Co. D, Capt. P. H. Ellis. Lt.-Colonel Daingerfield Parker was assigned to the command. He was relieved in 1895 by Lieut.-Colonel W. S. Worth.

The 13th Infantry remained till April 19, 1898, when it was ordered to Cuba. It returned from Montauk Point in September, 1898, and left for service in the Far East April 28, 1899.

The 13th was temporarily relieved by Battery A, 5th Artillery, Captain Benjamin K. Roberts commanding the Battery.

A battalion of the 11th Infantry, Lieut.-Col. Charles S. Davis commanding the Post, was stationed here from August 12, 1900, to April 7th, 1901.

In April, 1901, Fort Columbus was Garrisoned by the 49th, 52nd and 83rd companies C. A. C. and the 8th Artillery band under command of Major E. R. Hills.

Headquarters, Band and the 2nd Battalion, 8th Infantry, under command of Colonel W. E. Dougherty, arrived October 12, 1902, and left for Manila Feby. 19, 1906, under command of Colonel Frederick A. Smith.

The Headquarters, Band and one Battalion of the 12th Infantry were stationed here from May 24, 1906, to June 29, 1909, commanded successively by Colonels Leven C. Allen and

W. H. C. Bowen, and were relieved Sept. 18, 1909, by the Headquarters, Band and 3rd Battalion of the 29th Infantry, Colonel Hobart K. Bailey in command, the 1st and 2d Battalions being at Forts Porter and Niagara respectively.

Colonel Bailey was followed upon his retirement by Colonel G. R. Cecil Sept. 3, 1911, and Colonel Cecil by Colonel John S. Mallory, Sept. 10, 1912.

The 29th Infantry was followed by the 22d Infantry, which arrived April 1st, 1917.

The 1st Battalion and Headquarters 16th Infantry arrived at Fort Jay on August 1, 1922, under Command of Colonel Francis E. Lacey, Jr.

The World War

Congress declared a State of War against Germany on April 6th, 1917, Good Friday, at 3.12 A. M. The Battalion of the 22nd U. S. Infantry stationed here was by order of Colonel John C. F. Tillson held in readiness, and at 3.30 A. M., less than one half hour after the declaration, it embarked on boats of the Revenue Service and before noon all the German ships in the Harbour had been seized and their crews interned on Ellis Island. This was the beginning of a period of intense activity by the Line and Staff on Governors Island. Troops arrived here from all parts of the Country en route to France. Camps were erected for their accommodation during the summer of 1917 which were occupied till the Spring of 1918, when cantonments were completed. Buildings were hastily constructed for the use of the Quartermaster Corps, Ordnance, Intelligence and War Risk Insurance and other Departments and large numbers of officers were added to the complement on duty.

The most extensive were the buildings of the Warehousing Department of the Quartermaster Corps. These were erected upon the Extension of 102 acres fortunately available for this purpose and before the end of hostilities was in sight the Extension was a complete war plant comprising two miles of water front, five miles of automobile road, eight miles of railroad with cars and engines marked "Governors Island R. R.", twin car ferry bridges, and over 70 buildings, iron warehouses with covered floor space of more than one and a third million square feet, with a stock on hand valued at $75,000,000, and a daily shipment of over $1,000,000. These are by no means the "warehouses" mentioned in the preface, and it is a cause of satisfaction that the Extension of 1901 was completed in time to assist so materially in the Great War.

Roster of Officers on Duty at Fort Jay

August 1st, 1922

First Battalion, 16th U. S. Infantry

Colonel:

Lacey, Francis E., Jr., Commanding Officer, Post and 16th Infantry.

Majors:

Early, Clifford C., C. O. 1st Batn., 16th Inft'y.
Davidson, Joseph H., D. S., I. G. D., 2d Corps Area.

Captains:

Spalding, Basil D.
Seamon, W. E., Actg. Adjt.
Phipps, George T., Adjutant.
Kelsch, George E.

CAPTAINS:

Weaver, Lamar.
Long, Frederick K.
Robertson, William J., Post and Regtl. Supply Officer.
McNamara, Francis J.
Franklin, Harry L.
White, Walker G.
Tiedeman, John E.
Hefferman, Thomas L. (Asst. J. A. G. 2nd Corps Area and Fort Jay.)

CAPTAINS ATTACHED:

Hilliard, William G., Jr., Inft'y.
Gent, William F., Inft'y.

1ST LIEUTENANTS:

Flanigan, William A., Post Exchange Officer.
Applegate, Edward C.
Tanzola, Vincent J.
Ruth, Albert.

CAPTAINS: (QUARTERMASTER)

Guillemet, E. A., Salvage and Transportation.
Ettridge, James B., Post Commissary and Q. M. Officer.

LT.-COLONEL: (MEDICAL)

Rich, Edwin E., Post Surgeon.

MAJORS: (MEDICAL)

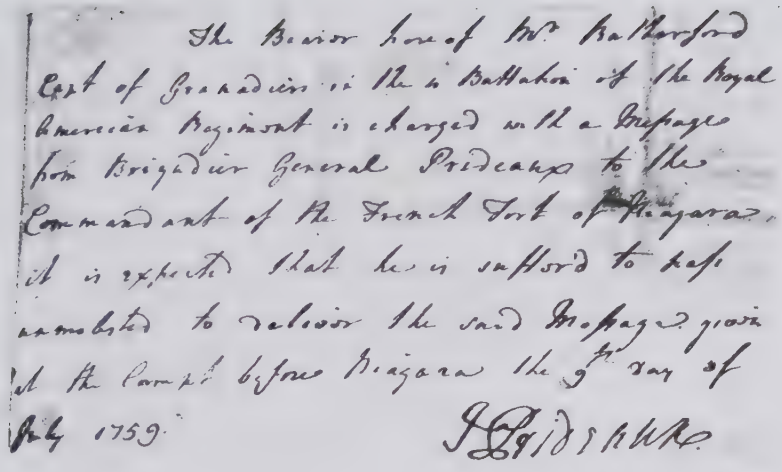
Roberts, Bruce H., Post Dental Surgeon.
Crawford, Paul H., Asst. to Post Surgeon.

CAPTAINS: (MEDICAL)

Nettles, Oscar W., Asst. to Post Surgeon.
Harrington, James B., Asst. to Post Dental Surgeon.

MAJOR WALTER RUTHERFURD

SIXTH SON OF SIR JOHN RUTHERFURD AND ELIZABETH CAIRNCROSS
OF EDGERSTON IN ROXBURGHSH RE. SCOTLAND



The Bearer hereof Mr Rutherford
Capt of Grenadiers in the 1st Battalion of the Royal
American Regiment is charged with a Message
from Brigadier General Prideaux to the
Commandant of the French Fort of Niagara.
It is expected that he is suffered to pass
unmolested to deliver the said Message given
at the Camp before Niagara the 9th day of
July 1759.

"Humanity obliges me to write to you on this occasion. Already the Fort under your command has made a very gallant Defense much beyond what could be expected from your circumstances, both with respect to the works of the place and the Garrison, composed mostly of Militia. But I must remind you that the Indians which form a considerable part of my army begin to be very impatient at your unreasonable obstinacy. Our approach being far advanced, your Works much damaged, fresh supplies coming daily to us, and after what has happened near Quebec, at Oswego and on the Ohio, not the least prospect remaining for any relief, I am under a necessity according to precedent set me by Mr. Montcalm at Fort William Henry to Declare and Promise to the Indians, that if you don't now accept just and honourable terms, that as soon as we shall be Masters of the Fort, they shall have free Liberty to dispose of all Persons and effects found in the Fort. I hope you will believe nothing but necessity could compel me to this, being with esteem

Your very humble servant,

J. PRIDEAUX"

"Walter Rutherfurd entered the British army at the age of fifteen. His Father at one time had eighteen sons and grandsons in the army, navy, and East India service. He served on ships of war off the coasts of America, Portugal, and Spain until 1746. From that time until 1754 he served as Lieutenant in the Royal Scots, and also as Paymaster in Flanders, France, and Germany. At the outbreak of the French and Indian war, he was doing garrison duty in Ireland. He sailed for America in 1756, having secured a commission as Captain in the Royal Americans. After a few months in New York, he went to the front. During this war, he held the positions of paymaster of a battalion, and judge-advocate of the army, with the rank of Captain, and subsequently Major in the Royal American Regiment. He received the terms of surrender at Fort Niagara, and when Montreal surrendered, the keys were delivered to him. He was detailed for duty in New York in the fall of 1758 for a short time, and while there married. He returned to his Regiment and served until the end of the war, when he resigned his commission and settled in America."

CHAPTER XI.

Royal American Regiment, 60th Foot

Reference has been made in Chapter II to the Royal Troops stationed here in the Colonial days. A record of their service will be of interest on account of their association with Governors Island.

H. M. 22d Regiment of Foot, stationed here in 1767, now the Cheshire Regiment, served at the Battle of Louisburg, where Major-General Sir William Pepperell, whose Regiment was stationed here in 1755, won his title, also at Bunker Hill and at Quaker Hill.

H. M. 44th Regiment of Foot, now the Essex Regiment, stationed here in 1767, saw service at Ticonderoga, Fort du Quesne, Niagara, Brandywine, and the Battle of Long Island, and later at Bladensburg under Colonel Brooke and at Baltimore under Major Johnson.

The Royal American Regiment

The Regiment of most interest to Americans, however, is the Royal American Regiment, H. M. 60th Regiment of Foot, now the King's Royal Rifle Corps, 60th Foot, of which H. M. the King is the Colonel in Chief.

This was raised in 1755, the recruits coming mainly from Virginia and Maryland, and was organized on Governors Island and for many years was on duty here, as mentioned in Chapter II. Walter Richards in "Her Majesty's Army" points out that this Regiment and the Rifle Brigade are the only Infantry Regiments the Chief Officers of which are denominated Colonel in Chief and Colonel Commandant, and that a distinctive feature of the King's Rifle Corps is that no fewer than six Acts of Parliament have been passed concerning it.

"Their first active employment," he says, "was in 1757, two years after their organization on Governors Island, when they were engaged at Charleston, on the Canadian frontier and at the affair of Fort William Henry. The following year (1758) gained for them their first distinction, which commemorates the share they had in the 2nd Expedition against Louisburg. Nor was Louisburg the only scene of their prowess. Six companies were with the British force * * * at Ticonderoga. They fought at Kingston and Prince Edward's Island. In 1759 they fought under General Prideaux at Fort Niagara; some of the Regiment were with Sir Jeffrey Amherst, while others again were with Wolfe when on the Heights of Abraham he gained Canada for the British Crown and died in the gaining."

Here they so distinguished themselves that according to tradition the gallant Wolfe himself bestowed on them their motto

CELER ET AUDAX

It does not seem that there exists any positive record of this fact, but the wording of the order in 1824 giving special permission for the resumption bears out the theory. The order was as follows:

SIR:

I have the honour to acquaint you by direction of the Commander in Chief that His Majesty has been pleased to permit the 60th Regiment to resume the motto *Celer et Audax* which was won by the Regiment in commemoration of its distinguished bravery whilst employed with the British Army in North America under Major General Wolfe in the year 1750.

The Regiment has as a badge a bugle on the glengarry. On the helmet plate is a bugle and a maltese cross bearing the motto.

On the cross are the names of the great Regimental battles, viz.: Louisburg, Quebec, 1759, Roleia, Vimiera, Martinique, Talavera, Busaco, Fuentes d'Onor, Albuera, Ciudad Rodrigo, Badajoz, Salamanca, Vittoria, Pyrenees, Nivelle, Nive, Orthes, Toulouse, Peninsula, Punjaub, Mooltan, Goojerat, South Africa (1851-3), Delhi, Taku Forts, Pekin, South Africa (1879), Ahmad Khel, Kandahar (1880), Afghanistan (1878-80), Egypt (1882-4), Tel-El-Kebir, Chitral, S. Africa (1899-1902), Defense of Ladysmith, Relief of Ladysmith.

It is a cause of deep satisfaction to realize that a Battalion of this distinguished Regiment, *celer et audax* in practice as well as by motto, not only came from our soil in the persons of its first recruits, but that it gained its growth and training in this Island-Garrison, where it remained for a long tour of duty, and that by what we may now regard as a most happy occurrence of military routine it was ordered away to the West Indies before the outbreak of hostilities in 1775-6. Thus the 60th Foot were not arrayed against those who were their brethren in blood as well as in sympathy, and the author ventures at the close of this story of the Past to present his compliments, with which

he feels he can unofficially join those of the Command Stationed on Governors Island today, to the 60th Foot of 1756, the King's Royal Rifle Corps of 1922.

It is not alone in arms that Governors Island is bound by lasting ties of interest and sympathy to the mother country. The Church and the Army in every land have much in common—the Army to protect and the Church to bless. This Garrison has been no exception to the rule. There is, however, a deeper connection than would appear upon the surface as a part of our history. It is that the ministrations of religion here for nearly seventy years carried on at the request of the Army by the venerable Corporation of Trinity Church have been, and are today, possible because of the Royal endowments of the British Crown which constitute the wealth of the Parish of Trinity Church. The Parish regards it a privilege to minister to the spiritual needs of the Army. From the point of view of the historian there is an added interest in reflecting that when in the providence of God the existing close relations between the Army and the venerable Parish began, they not only opened the way to mutual acquaintance and esteem, but gave the Parish an opportunity among its other works to pay from the Royal endowments a tribute of appreciation of this very distinguished Regiment of the British Army once stationed on Governors Island.

Thus remembrance of the Past and loyalty to the Present go hand in hand. The Prince of Wales Feathers still bend over the pulpit of old St. Paul's Chapel and the Coronation of His Majesty King George V is solemnly observed in the Parish Church. Such things as this help to show that men do not even in this age altogether forget the deeds of their forefathers, and when His Royal Highness the Prince of Wales visited New York recently the Rector of Trinity Church received him as his Grandfather had been received,

THE REGIMENTAL COLOUR OF THE KING'S ROYAL RIFLE CORPS
ORIGINALLY THE ROYAL AMERICAN REGIMENT 60TH FOOT

PRESENTED TO THE RECTOR CHURCH WARDENS AND VESTRYMEN
OF TRINITY CHURCH, NEW YORK
BY THE
OFFICERS AND MEN OF THE KING'S ROYAL RIFLE CORPS
JANUARY 9TH 1921

many years before in the old church of the Royal foundation.

A remarkable blending of Colonial days on Governors Island with the present occurred when the ancient Regtl Colour of the Royal Rifles was received as described below:

BLESSING AND INSTALLATION OF
THE REGIMENTAL COLOUR OF THE KING'S ROYAL RIFLE CORPS
ORIGINALLY THE ROYAL AMERICAN REGIMENT, 60TH FOOT
PRESENTED TO THE RECTOR, CHURCH WARDENS AND VESTRYMEN OF TRINITY CHURCH, NEW YORK
BY THE
OFFICERS AND MEN OF THE KING'S ROYAL RIFLE CORPS
JANUARY 9TH, 1921

On Sunday, January 9, took place the historically interesting ceremony of blessing and installing the regimental color of the King's Royal Rifle Corps, which is identical in history, in the designation "60th Foot," and most certainly identical in sympathy with the old Royal American Regiment, now identified with the American Army of to-day by the generous presentation which was celebrated on Sunday. Organized in 1756 under the Duke of Cumberland, commander of the British forces in America, this regiment was recruited from the States of Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia. It was commanded by Lord Loudon, Henri Bouquet, Gen. Sir Jeffrey Amherst and many others of names well known on both sides of the ocean. Recruited to 4,400 men, the 1st Battalion was stationed on Governors Island in 1756 and succeeding years, a battalion being stationed also at Albany. It went forth to give battle in the French and Indian Wars, with great bravery and efficiency, as its motto still records: *Celer et Audax*. Before the Revolution actually broke out, the Royal American Regiment was ordered to the West

Indies, going later to England and changing its title. Its military history since has been always a noble one, and from Louisburg to Ladysmith and all through the World War its shield has been kept bright.

The regiment has added another star to its record by the generous gift of the only ancient regimental color in its possession to the place of its early history, as a token of the fraternal spirit which animates the two countries of England and America as allies in the World War.

The ceremonies began with a lunch given by Major Gen. R. L. Bullard, at which were present the Marquis Carisbrooke, cousin to King George; Major Gen. H. K. Bethell, British military attaché; Capt. O. Balfour, of the King's Royal Rifle Corps, military secretary to the Duke of Devonshire, the Governor General of Canada; Capt. Gloster Armstrong, British Consul General; Col. William Weigel, U. S. A.; Brig. Gen. Cornelius Vanderbilt, Judge Dykeman and Mr. Philip Rhinelander. At 3 o'clock the colors were received from the Rev. Edmund Banks Smith, chaplain of the post, by a color guard from the 22d U. S. Infantry. As Chaplain Smith handed over the colors in front of his quarters, the escort presented arms, a fanfare from the regimental buglers marked the passing, and spectators, in large numbers, who were present on invitation, stood bareheaded. Then, with the regimental band playing a quickstep, the color guard wheeled into position and, escorted by a company of the regiment in trench helmets and field equipment, paraded to the chapel. Added color was lent to the event by the presence of representatives of several uniformed organizations, including the Veteran Corps of Artillery, Governor's Footguards of Connecticut, and the Old Guard of New York. Nearly the entire personnel of Governors Island were present and in addition there were representatives of the Society of the

Cincinnati, Sons of the Revolution, Daughters of the Revolution, Daughters of the American Revolution, Society of Colonial Wars, the Loyal Legion and Military Society of the World War, members of the corporation of Trinity Church and a number of the clergy and many military and patriotic societies.

Arriving at the chapel the ancient color was carried in, flanked by the National ensign and the 22d Regimental. Lieut. J. V. Domminey acted as a special guard of honor. Vespers was sung by the Rev. Dr. Smith, assisted by the Rev. Dr. Geer, vicar emeritus of St. Paul's. The choir, augmented for the occasion, rendered the service under direction of Captain Halpin, choirmaster. The Rev. Dr. Manning, rector of Trinity Church, made a short address, in which he outlined the service of the Royal American Regiment and the reasons for the remarkable ceremony.

The historic colors were carried by the regiment in Canada, in Jamaica and to the Cape of Good Hope. In 1818 they became the property of Lieut. Col. Alexander Andrews, commanding; later of Col. Walter Holbeck, a succeeding commander, and Colonel Holbeck's widow presented the colors to the regiment, now known as the King's Royal Rifles. It was through the courtesy of Col. Lewis Butler and Field Marshal Grenfell, colonel commandant, that the colors are now returned to America.

At this point in the ceremonies the Chaplain read a cablegram just received:

> "Bournemouth, January 9th, Revd. Banks Smith, Headquarters Eastern Department, Governors Island: The King highly appreciates invitation and hopes that ceremony may further strengthen ties of friendship between British and American Armies. Rifles, all ranks, with you in spirit.
>
> "Lord Grenfell, *Field Marshal.*"

Chaplain Smith read the deed of gift, signed by Field Marshal Lord Grenfell as Colonel Commandant of the King's Royal Rifles, which gave the color, presented to the regiment in 1788, into the keeping of the Rector, Church Wardens and Vestrymen of Trinity Church, New York, and to be deposited in the Chapel of St. Cornelius the Centurion, Governors Island. Colonel Grenfell added: "It is hoped also that this color may serve as a memento of the fact that the Royal American Regiment and the regiments of New York fought shoulder to shoulder not only during the many years of warfare which ended in the conquest of New France and the subjection of the Indian tribes bordering on the Great Lakes; but also, after the lapse of a century and a half, against a common enemy in a more terrible European contest." General Bethell made an address in which he voiced the sentiments of the King and pleaded for the closest unity between our two nations. The formal presentation of the colors was made by Emile A. Hart, great-grandson of Gen. Aaron Hart, who was commissary to Gen. Sir Jeffrey Amherst, of the Royal American Regiment. Mr. Hart wore on this occasion the gold gorget of General Hart preserved by his family. The presentation address of Mr. Hart was as follows:

> "Sole witness that we have to the Surrenders of Louisbourg, Quebec and Montreal, all these won partly by the prowess and bravery of The Royal Americans, may thou rest in peace in this sacred House of God, until thou art no more."

The colors were formally accepted by the Rev. Dr. William T. Manning, Rector of Trinity Church, and after being blessed and dedicated were hung with appropriate ceremonies above the high altar of the chapel.

ROYAL AMERICAN COEHORN MORTAR

from KING GEORGE II

FOR A CENTURY AND A HALF
ON GOVERNORS ISLAND

The regimental band played the British national anthem, followed by the American. The function closed with the rendering by the band of the March of the 1st Battalion, 60th Regiment, General Haldimand's, composed in 1780, and dedicated to the Honorable Lady Amherst.

The clubhouse was the scene of the concluding event of the day when General Bethell, as representative of Sir Auckland Geddes, the British Ambassador, who was unexpectedly prevented from being present; and General Bullard received the 600 guests who had filled the chapel and who pressed in great streams to the ball room, which had been beautifully decorated for the occasion. Among British officers present, besides those already mentioned, were Lieutenant Colonel Lloyd, D. S. O., Royal Suffolk Regiment; Major H. C. Fitzgerald, Royal Field Artillery; Captain Gibbs, R. F. Artillery; and Major Clegg, who has the unique distinction of having gone through the Battle of the Somme and the Battle of Jutland.

The Officers and the Stations of the Battalions of the King's Royal Rifle Corps, 60th Foot, are as follows (December, 1921):

Colonel in Chief.....The King

Colonels Commandant

Rt. Honble the Lord Grenfell, Field Marshal, G. C. B., G.C.M.G.

Lieutenant General Sir E. T. H. Hutton, K. C. B., K.C.M.G.

Major General R.S.R. Fetherstonhaugh, C. B.

Lieutenant General Sir W. P. Campbell, K.C.B.

Historian—Colonel Lewis Butler: Author of "Annals of the Kings Royal Rifle Corps"

Officer Commanding the Rifle Depot

COLONEL J. D. HERIOT MAITLAND, C.M.G., D.S.O.
Depot and Record Office.....Winchester

1st Battalion*.....Ballykinlar (temp)
2nd Battalion.....Clones
3rd Battalion.....Mhow
4th Battalion.....Quetta
5th Battalion.....Huntington Mil: Winchester
6th Battalion.....R 2d Middlesex Mol: Winchester

Allied Regiments Canadian Militia
South Saskatchewan Regiment
Nova Scotia Regiment

It was proposed, early in 1922, to present to the K. R. R. a fine Coehorn mortar, temp. George II, undoubtedly brought to America in early Colonial days and held by the K. R. R. on Governors Island.

The accompanying picture is of the Coehorn mortar which has been for many years in the Officers' Club.

The "2", artistically entwined in the "GR", gives its date as between 1727 and 1760.

A desire on the part of the authorities of Governors Island to show appreciation of the gift by the King's Royal Rifle Corps, 60th Foot, of their old Regimental Battle Flag of 1788 to Governors Island, has resulted in the authorization by the Secretary of War of the presentation of this Mortar to the Royal Rifles, as shown in the Order herewith quoted.

---

* The 1st Battalion ordered to India, September 14th, 1922.

The following communication has been issued regarding this piece of Ordnance:

War Department

The Adjutant General's Office

June 16th, 1922

In reply refer to Washington

AG 472.4 Governors Island, N. Y.
(6..12..22) (Miscl.) 2

Subject: Return of mortar found at Governors Island to King's Royal Rifle Corps, 60th Foot, British Army.

To Through the Commanding General, Second Corps Area, Governors Island, New York, to Reverend Edmund Banks Smith, O. R. C., Chaplain of St. Cornelius' Chapel of Trinity Church on Governors Island.

1. You are authorized to inform the Commanding Officer of the King's Royal Rifle Corps, 60th Foot, British Army, of the finding of a Coehorn Mortar at Governors Island, belonging to this Regiment as the Royal American Regiment, 60th Foot, and to offer in the name of the Secretary of War to return the Mortar to this Regiment.

2. If the offer is accepted you are authorized to return the Mortar to the Regiment after having arranged the necessary details with the Commanding Officer, providing the arrangements made involve no expense to the United States.

3. Upon your arrival in London you should report to the Military Attaché, American Embassy, and keep him informed as to the details concerning the return of this Mortar to the King's Royal Rifle Corps, 60th Foot.

By order of the Secretary of War,

R. E. Fraile,
Adjutant General.

1st Indorsement

Rcd Hdq 2d Corps Area
June 19th 1922
AG 472.4 (Miscl)

Hdqs. Second Corps Area..Governors Island N. Y.

June 22d, 1922:

To Rev. Edmund Banks Smith, O. R. C. Chaplain of St. Cornelius Chapel of Trinity Church on Governors Island, New York.

E. A. B.

It is satisfactory to close this story of the relations of the Royal Americans (now the Royal Rifles) with Governors Island by the insertion of the following communication which shows the keen interest for the Corps in the place of its early career. In compliance with the request contained in the communication Chaplain Smith sailed for England on this mission with the Mortar just as this book went to press, August 31, 1922.

American Embassy

London England

Office of the Military Attache

August 8th, 1922

From: The Military Attache

To: The Commanding General, 2d Corps Area, Governors Island, N. Y.

Subject: Return to the British Army of Small Mortar left at Govs Isld before the Revolutionary War.

References: A. G. 472 (Misc) Hdqrs 2d Corps Area, Govs Island N. Y. May 6/1922

1. With reference to the above mentioned subject this Office took up the matter with the War Office and it has been referred to the Commanding Officer of the 1st Battalion of the King's Royal Rifle which is the Battalion which used to be known as THE ROYAL AMERICAN REGT, 60TH, FOOT.

He stated that the Officers of the Regiment would be delighted to accept this Mortar and have already made a tentative programme for quite a little ceremony.

2. It is requested that if Captain Smith is going to bring this Mortar over, he make plans to arrive here as soon as possible, not later than the 10th or 11th of September, as under the Reorganization of the British Army this Battalion leaves for India on September 14th.

They expressed a keen desire to have the Mortar presented to the 1st Battalion. It is therefore requested that this Office be notified by cable whether or not Chaplain Smith will be able to bring this Mortar with him in time: and if so, upon what ship he will arrive.

Failing this, the Mortar will have to be presented to the remaining Officers and Men at the Depot at Winchester, in which case the ceremony would lose most of its value to the Regiment.

O. N. SOLBERT, Major Genl Staff

By D. H. GILLETTO, Major C. E.
Asst. Military Attache.

1ST INDORSEMENT

HDQRS 2D CORPS AREA: Aug 18, 1922

To Chaplain Edmund Banks Smith Govs Isld N. Y.

F. W. L.

Consideration of the career of the Royal American Regiment can not close better than with the words of Colonel Lewis Butler, "formerly Captain in the Regiment", in the 1st volume of his work, "The Annals of the King's Royal Rifle Corps":

> "And so the Royal American Regiment bids farewell to the country in which it was originally raised. * * * Among all the Regiments of the British Army our own Corps alone has any historic connection with the United States: and with all due humility we would venture to express the hope that, although long separated, it has never disgraced the American name which it once bore and that our cousins on the farther side of the Atlantic may still feel not entirely uninterested in its career. Be that as it may, it is undeniable that the first American Regiment was that known at the present day by the name of The King's Royal Rifle Corps".

PRESENTATION OF THE [illegible]

Lt. General Sir Edward Hutton, K.C.B.

PRESENTATION OF MORTAR

The ceremony of the Presentation of the Coehorn Mortar took place at the Depôt of the King's Royal Rifle Corps at Winchester, England, on September 12th, 1922.

The following article (condensed) descriptive of the occasion is taken from the *Hampshire Chronicle,* Winchester:

"The ceremony at the Rifle Depôt, Winchester, on Tuesday —to which we made preliminary reference in our edition of last week—though brief, was dignified, and eloquent of the good feeling which now happily prevails between this country and the United States of America. It was really a graceful act in a kindly spirit of reciprocity, the first move in which it is gratifying to know came from our own side. The King's Royal Rifle Corps had its origin in North America as the 60th Royal Americans in the reig.. of George II.—Christmas Day, 1755, has always been adopted as the actual birthday. The Regiment was formed of 4000 men in four Battalions, and General The Earl of Loudoun, Commander-in-Chief of the British Army in America, was appointed Colonel-in-Chief. The Regiment was recruited from settlers, and distinguished itself greatly before the outbreak of the American War of Independence in 1775—they had no part in those hostilities. The Regiment dropped its old title of 'Royal Americans' in 1824, and was granted by George IV. the name of 'The Duke of York's Own Rifle Corps,' and six years later became, by order of William IV., '60th The King's Royal Rifle Corps.' All the interesting facts are set out in the History of the Regiment, so excellently compiled and edited by Lieut.-Gen. Sir Edward Hutton, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., one of the Colonels-Commandant.

The 1st Battalion of the old Royal American Regiment was stationed on Governor's Island, New York, in 1756, and succeeding years, and there, on Sunday, January 9th, 1921—166 years later—a ceremony of historical interest took place. Mainly through the courtesy of Col. Lewis Butler and Field-Marshal Lord Grenfell the only ancient regimental colour in the possession of The King's Royal Rifle Corps was returned as a gift to the place of its early history—in the official record, 'as a token of the fraternal spirit which animates the two countries of England and America as allies in the World War.' The colour, 'presented to the Rector, Churchwardens, and Vestrymen of Trinity Church, New York, by the Officers and Men of The King's Royal Rifle Corps,' was blessed and installed with much ceremonial on the day mentioned, and deposited in the Chapel of St. Cornelius the Centurion, Governor's Island.

A desire on the part of the authorities of Governor's Island to show appreciation of the gift by The King's Royal Rifle Corps of their old Regimental Battle Flag of 1788 to Governor's Island resulted in the authorisation by the American Secretary of War of the presentation of a Coehorn mortar to The King's Royal Rifle Corps. This Coehorn mortar, *temp.* George II., was undoubtedly taken to America in the early Colonial days, and held by the Royal American Regiment on Governor's Island—it had in later times been kept in the Officers' Club there. The Coehorn mortar was found in a part which was known to have been the Depôt of the 60th Royal Americans. The suggestion that it should be offered to The King's Royal Rifle Corps originated with Major-Gen. R. L. Bullard, who commands the area of New York. The idea was cordially entertained by the Secretary of War at Washington, and action was taken through the American Ambassador in London to ascertain whether such a gift would

be acceptable. The King's Royal Rifle Corps heartily reciprocated the suggestion, and stated they would be much honoured to receive such a token expressing, as it would, the sympathy of the United States Government with the old-established connection of The King's Royal Rifle Corps with the 60th Royal Americans. It was accordingly decided that the 'Coehorn' mortar should be sent to England in charge of the Rev. Edmund Banks Smith, O.R.C., Chaplain of St. Cornelius' Chapel of Trinity Church on Governor's Island—a gentleman who has interested himself in the history and archæology of the American Army.

It was the ceremony of formally returning this mortar, which took place on the parade ground at the Rifle Depôt, Winchester, at half-past twelve P. M. on Tuesday. The Colonel of the Battalion, Lieut.-Colonel R. G. Jelf, attended. The Riflemen at the Depôt also paraded.

The American Ambassador was unable to attend personally, but he was represented by Mr. Walter C. Thurston, Secretary of the Embassy. The other representatives of the American Government accompanying him were Major Douglas H. Gillette, C. of E., Assistant Military Attaché, representing the War Department; Chaplain Edmund Banks Smith, O.R.C., and Major Chaplain Herbert S. Smith, U. S. A., who came from Cambrai to be present at the ceremony. The Right Hon. the Lord Grenfell, Field-Marshal, G.C.B., G.C.M.G., the senior of the Colonels Commandant of The King's Royal Rifle Corps, was unable to attend, and he was represented by the Colonel Commandant next in seniority. Lieut.-General Sir Edward T. H. Hutton, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., and Lieut.-Gen. Sir W. Pitcairn Campbell, K.C.B., also a Colonel Commandant, attended with him. Those we have mentioned by name were the American and British representatives taking the active part in the ceremony. Other officers present were

Lieut.-Gen. Sir G. M. Harper, Southern Command, and Lieut.-Gen. Sir Eric Stuart Wortley, Staff Officer, Southern Command; Col. Salmon, C.M.G., D.S.O., officer in charge of the Rifle Depôt, Col. Price-Davies, V.C., Major Sir John Lees, D.S.O., M.C., Major S. H. Ferrand, D.S.O., M.C., Major A. J. H. Sloggett, D.S.O., Captain Moore Gwynne, D.S.O., M.C., Major and Quartermaster Eastmead, Capt. Barber, Lieut. F. H. Norris, D.C.M. (Adjutant, Rifle Depôt), and Lieut. Eve. From the Hampshire Depôt there were present Lieut.-Col. Middleton, D.S.O. (commanding), Lieut.-Colonel Earle, D.S.O., Capt. Tarrant, D.C.M., Capt. Reeves, O.B.E., Lieut. Lambert, M.C., Lieut. Smith, and Lieut. Breecher. The Chaplain of the Garrison and Mrs. Bateman, and Major Sopwith, R.E., were also present. The Mayor of Winchester (Councillor Stanley Clifton), who is away, was represented by Alderman A. Edmeades, C.B.E., D.L., J.P. (who, as Mayor of Winchester during the war period of five years, had so much to do with greeting the immense number of American troops through Winchester), and the Dean of Winchester was present as representing the Church of England.

The 'Coehorn' mortar—so named by a Dutch baron by whom it was invented—was placed midway between the guard of honour and a table bedecked with the British and American flags. It is a small piece of ordnance, of the usual mortar type, some 16 or 18 inches long, and has the figure '2' entwined in the monogram 'G.R.,' which gives its date as between 1727 and 1760.

As Gen. Sir Edward Hutton came within the area of the troops, accompanied by the Secretary of the American Embassy and the others, a general salute was given by the guard of honour, of which Captain L. A. M. Morris was in command, with Lieut. H. C. H. Illingworth, M.C., and

Sec.-Lieut. C. J. Herbert-Stepney. The guard of honour was inspected, a march meanwhile being played by the Band (under Sergt. Bugler Poultock). After this, General Sir Edward Hutton and those with him took up a position at the table, and the presentation ceremony commenced.

Chaplain EDMUND BANKS SMITH, O.R.C.—speaking from near where the Coehorn mortar had been placed, and addressing General Sir Edward Hutton—said:

[Here followed a recital of the historical events leading up to the present occasion.]

* * * * * * *

General Sir Edward Hutton, in the name of the Secretary of War, I have the honour to present to you, on behalf of the King's Royal Rifle Corps generally, and the 1st Battalion in particular, this cannon, which has come back to its own home.

The guard of honour then presented arms, and the band played 'The Star Spangled Banner,' the officers meanwhile standing at the salute, and the male portion of the civilian onlookers removing their hats.

Lieut.-General Sir EDWARD T. H. HUTTON, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., advancing to the spot that had been occupied by Chaplain Banks Smith, said: Mr. Thurston, representing the Ambassador of the United States of America, Major Gillette, representing the War Department of the United States, the Rev. Banks Smith, Chaplain on Governor's Island of the United States Army, and Riflemen; I regret very much that our respected Field Marshal, Lord Grenfell, is not able to be here to-day and to take the leading and most important part in this very interesting and historical function. He has

asked me to express his extreme regret to you, Sir (General Hutton saluted the representative of the American Ambassador), at not being able to personally convey his signification of this gift. The Rev. Banks Smith has told us something of the history of the gift which the United States Government has been pleased to make through its War Office, and through its Embassy to this country. That gift is on a par with the memorial wreath that was placed at the foot of our war memorial statue in the Close of the Cathedral of this city. The two acts are practically one, and they are intended without doubt to recognise the significance of our Regiment as having been raised in 1755-56 in the Eastern State of America for—as the Chaplain has reminded us—a special purpose, to fight the Red Indian in his natural fastnesses, and to help destroy the French power in North America. The gift, therefore, is of historical significance to us Riflemen. We, on our side, recognise that though we are making history with rapid strides, and many have not had time to consider the past, none the less 69 years out of the 170 years of our Regimental existence were passed as 'The 60th Royal Americans,' and of our battle honours, the forty battle honours which have up to this period—exclusive of the Great War—been granted to us, no less than 22 were won under our designation of 60th Royal Americans. We are proud, Sir, of our connection with North America and the great Republic across the Atlantic, and we as the King's Royal Rifle Corps—the 60th Rifles—have done our best to emulate the example of our predecessors, the 60th Royal Americans. Sufficient, Sir, for the significance, therefore, of this gift, from the point of view of historical interest. But behind this gift there is far more intended and meant. It is that it shall be symbolical of the tie uniting the United States with this country and, above

all, the British Army with the great Army of the United States—a sort of *liaison,* a silken tie, binding the two great branches of the Anglo-Saxon race. That the United States Government should have selected our Regiment for an honour such as this is great indeed, but we recognise it is merely from this fact that we are a unit—and not altogether, we hope, an insignificant unit—of the British Army, and we are taken as a type worthy to receive such a significant gift. It is in that view we recognise this gift, and also with gratitude for the sympathy shown us at the recent unveiling of our war memorial in this Cathedral city. It is, after all, these little touches of comradeship and fellow-feeling which go for so much. We cannot but recollect that during the last Great War we fought shoulder-to-shoulder with the American Army, as with the French Army, on the Western Front. The significance of that should never be forgotten, and in itself will make a very lasting and continuous tie between these two great branches of the Anglo-Saxon race. And all thinking men must feel that if it could only come about that the United States of America and the British Empire agreed to sink all differences and work together for the peace and prosperity of the world at large, it would be all the better for the human race. Sir, I beg to thank you very much for being present here to-day, and for representing the Ambassador of the United States Government on this memorable occasion.

The band and bugles played one of the Rifle marches, 'A-hunting we will go,' and then the guard of honour once more presenting arms and the whole of the officers, American and British, standing at the salute, 'God Save the King' was played, and the ceremony (which had lasted five minutes under the half-hour) was brought to a conclusion. The

guard of honour and the band marched away at the short, quick step of the Rifles. Mr. Thurston, Chaplain Banks Smith, General Sir Edward Hutton, and General Pitcairn Campbell obliged the camera men by standing near the Coehorn to be photographed, and subsequently they and the others were guests at luncheon at the Officers' Mess. The mortar was also placed in the Officers' Mess."

EPILOGUE

History is more than a mere statement of facts. It is, or should be, all of this for accuracy, for truth, but many are satisfied with *statement* as the end, whereas it should be but the beginning.

Herein lies the explanation of the frequent failure of the nation or the individual to learn by experience, which is another name for applied History, in that many mistake *experiences* for experience and fail to recognize in the rapid onward march of individual events the slower, grander movement of History, which is the sum total of the fleeting figures which compose it. These figures come and go; they are added up by the infallible hand of time and are erased to make room for others. All that shall finally remain is Result. We may not on that account despise the fact nor the figure because it is small, but rather pay our respect because it, so small, is a controlling factor in the great Result, in some way contributing to that "one far-off divine event to which the whole creation moves."

Emerson tells us that History is the "record of the works of the one mind common to all individual men; that a man is the whole encyclopædia of facts: that the creation of a thousand forests is in one acorn, and that Egypt, Greece, Rome, Gaul, Britain, America lie folded already in the first man."

These profound words may be applied to the subject of this history. If the fate of a nation lies folded in one man, it is certainly true that three hundred years of the activity of many men concentrated in one spot must have an enormous influence upon the community in which that spot is enshrined. And Governors Island, the "Jewel of New York," as the author's friend Baron Nicholas de Lodygensky calls it, lying a pendant of her larger sister Manhattan, both by geographical posi-

tion and in history carries out the idea of concentration and importance as well as of beauty.

Governors Island is a name to conjure by in our City and State and Nation, both military and civilian, for the reason that it has in its history represented important circumstance and high ideal. Purchased honourably by treaty from its aboriginal owners, it passed at once into the official life of the Dutch Colonial Government. Consequent upon the final English conquest of 1674 it increased in importance as in value. The "Smiling Garden of the Sovereigns of the Province" in the piping times of peace, it took on the frown of war when danger beset its borders. Governors, Statesmen, the Military, all agreed in its value for defence. Washington issued orders for the breastworks of '76 and Putnam made haste at candle-lighting. The literates of Columbia College toiled in the post-Revolutionary trenches, and from that day to this it has been a citadel of defence; artillery and infantry in turn have garrisoned its forts and mounted the guard upon its grassy slopes. Of later years it has become in addition the Headquarters of Administration, and thus in its whole career it has exemplified the two cardinal principles of continuity and progress. In our haste for results rather than for the Result we forget that progress can be best secured by conservative continuity. This would seem to be the lesson Governors Island teaches.

It is a silent lesson and it is to be read in the mirror of experience into which he gazes who studies History, or even so small a part of it as this brief book contains.

Continuity of official life in one spot for three hundred years means much in the history of any land. When it is recalled that official status on this Island has prevailed under the flags of three distinct Powers, each one at war with the

GOVERNORS ISLAND THE FORT AS IT MIGHT BE

one following or preceding, and one with both, it will be granted that the subject of this history has inherited sufficient conservatism to explain some things that harass the would-be progressive today. Our Island in its story recalls to the thoughtful mind visions of the shadowy red man lurking in its virgin forest, traditions of the sturdy Dutch with their windmill and plantation, of the elegant English Colonial of the Charles and the Georges, and coming finally to our own more recent history and to the present day, we confess to conscious pride when we view our splendid soldiery, which in its personnel of officers and men unconsciously inherits and exemplifies the virtues of those who under other flags but with much the same ideals have trod this land before us.

The three Flags of Holland, England and America have known the winds of our Island since 1637. This spot has had its part in the forging of the nation, the welding together of materials differing in their character but not in their substance. The work is going on here today of perfecting the work so well begun but never to be so completed that labour may cease.

This is continuity, and because it is on right lines, actuated by high motives, it will receive the reward that a distinct law of nature prescribes.

The purpose of the author in writing this history has been attained if he has correctly stated facts as they occurred and if he has so entwined the Three Flags which have floated here that while each preserves its identity, it still lends colour to the rest and deepens the strength of that Flag we must love best because it is ours.

In the great destiny of Nations we know not yet what part we shall play. Continuity on the lines of that wisdom which belongs to the ages and progress in every application to the changing conditions of the century or of the hour are elements

of lasting power and prepare a people for that struggle which is sure to come soon to the weak and some time to the strong.

It is not too much to say that Governors Island has played well and consistently its part for God and Country in the past, and not too much to hope it will ever do so in the unknown years that are to come.

hardcover
0832861510

5345 032